





Hall Use. No 2370-54









2473  
B. E.

2473

WOOD'S  
SKETCH OF THE FIRST SETTLEMENT  
OF  
LONG-ISLAND.







Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
Boston Public Library

<http://www.archive.org/details/sketchoffirstset1865wood>





A SKETCH  
OF THE  
FIRST SETTLEMENT  
OF THE SEVERAL TOWNS ON  
**LONG ISLAND,**  
WITH THEIR  
**POLITICAL CONDITION,**

TO THE  
END OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION,

BY

*John Wood*

With a Biographical Memoir and Additions by  
ALDEN J. SPOONER.  
A Portrait and Photographs of Dwellings.

Brooklyn:

PRINTED FOR THE FURMAN CLUB.  
1865.

7583

187.020

187.020

187.020

EDITION.

200 COPIES OF THIS WORK ARE PRINTED ON SMALL PAPER.

50 " " " " LARGE "

N<sup>o</sup> 108.

C. F. J.

AT L. BODDNER & SON, COURT ST., BROOKLYN.



## INTRODUCTORY NOTE.

---

THE very limited editions of Silas Wood's Sketch, were published at a time when there was a comparatively slender population in Brooklyn, and upon the rest of Long-Island, and it is believed a much lighter appreciation of the value of History than is felt at the present time.

As the benevolent and industrious author did not expect to be reimbursed for his outlay in printing, and was never in circumstances above the necessity and wisdom of a careful economy, the paper and mechanical execution of the work are below its proper character and dignity.

It has been thought but a proper tribute to the earliest Long-Island Historian, (passing by the descriptive essay of old Denton in 1670,) that a fair and slightly edition should be printed, with such remnants of his life and services, as could be gathered after the departure of most of his contemporaries.

Long-Island has, perhaps, been more fortunate than some portions of the Union in historiographers. Three at least of her sons have framed narratives touching upon points throughout her length and breadth. That of Silas Wood is devoted mainly to the first settlements, and first appeared in 1824. Benjamin F. Thompson followed, with his first edition in a single volume, in 1839, and his second edition, in two volumes, in 1843. The work of Mr. Thompson is characterized by great industry and research, and is by far the fullest reservoir of local incident, personal memoir, and genealogical deduction, which has yet appeared. The history by the Rev. Nathaniel S. Prime, printed in 1845, which could hardly be said to have been published, as it was kept from the bookstores, is peculiarly attentive to the theological record of the Island, of which the venerable and distinguished author, a minister of several generations, whose clerical generations follow him, was fitted to be the annalist. These authors have all, within twenty years past, found a resting place in the soil they loved and celebrated.

The labors of the Hon. Henry C. Murphy, at home and abroad, (who fortunately yet lives to continue them,) on various points requiring thorough research, peculiarly in matters of Dutch History, are of the first importance and value.

Another author survives, who, though not claiming the place of a historian by a combined and symmetrical work, is entitled to an equal place with any other

#### IV

Long Island writer, for persistent interest and untiring industry in exploring all accessible sources of information, and for discrimination in the occasional use of his stores to illustrate historic points. We allude, of course, to Henry Onderdonk, jr., of Jamaica, L. I. His "Revolutionary Incidents of Kings, Queens and Suffolk," are materials of pith and point, as shewing the spirit of trying times. It is hoped he may be long spared to continue those useful labors which to him are recreations.

To this list of Island works, is to be added a respectable number of town histories and special memoirs, beginning with Gabriel Furman's highly prized "Notes on Brooklyn." Of this a superior edition, learnedly annotated, has recently been published by "The Faust Club." It is known also, that an abler and much fuller work is in existence, by Henry R. Stiles, M. D., which it is to be hoped may soon pass from its chrysalis state of M.S.S.

Silas Wood's Huntington, Riker's Newtown, Strong's Flatbush, Mandeville's Flushing, Macdonald's Jamaica, Griffin's Orient, Lyman Beecher's Sermon and H. P. Hedges' discourse of Easthampton, are all efforts in the right direction, which should be further expanded, and invite the other towns to similar labors.

With these initiatory works, and others which are to come, with a Historical Society which has already gathered a large body of materials in every department of research and illustration, it is to be hoped that knowledge may be sought and imparted in regard to our beautiful Island, which may make it better understood and known to the increasing thousands, who are making it the place of their chosen homes. With a proper pride on the part of the citizens, it may come to be in the State, what it was reported to be by the inhabitants of New-Amsterdam to those of Old Amsterdam, "*the crown of the province.*"

---

☞ Furman's Notes on Brooklyn, was reprinted at this office, and some of the same type employed as in the original edition, which was also here printed.

It may please the curious to know, that the same course has been pursued with the present volume, all the editions having been printed at this office.







BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH  
OF THE  
HONORABLE SILAS WOOD.

---

IF HISTORY has one duty superior to another, it is that of rescuing from oblivion, and preserving for posterity, the pattern and example of those men who, without selfishness or ambition, have devoted themselves to gathering the memorials and remnants of the past, for the benefit of later generations. In this class was peculiarly to be named the HON. SILAS WOOD, whose name and fame Long-Island will not willingly "let die," although he has himself done his utmost to escape personal notice and commendation.

Silas Wood, author of the Sketch, &c., was born at West Hills, in the town of Huntington, Suffolk Co., L. I., September 14, 1769.

Jonas Wood, the ancestor of the family in this country, came from Halifax, in England, between 1630 and 1640. He was among the first settlers of Hempstead, and is named in the patent of that town in 1644.

He removed to Southampton, Suffolk Co., L. I., about 1649, and from thence to the town of Huntington, about 1655, at a place called West Hills, near the borders of Queens, about five miles south of the present village of Huntington. He purchased the eastern half of Copiague, and the Five Necks east of it, in 1657.

He was one of the deputies appointed to go to New-Haven, to solicit a union with that Colony, in 1658, and is mentioned in the town records the 20th April, 1660. An act of Joanna, his widow and administratrix, is mentioned the 18th of May following, from which it appears that he died between the 20th April and the 18th May, 1660. A family tradition informs us that he was drowned in attempting to ford the Peconic River at or near Riverhead.

The materials are too scanty to enable us to pursue his genealogy with accuracy in this sketch.

A lineal descendant of Jonas, was Joshua Wood, of Huntington, born October 12, 1716, who died September 6, 1779, aged 63. He was married to Ruth Wood, born May 26, 1724, who died August 29, 1807, aged 84.

These two last named were the father and mother of Samuel, Selah, and Silas Wood, the two first being respectable farmers, the last and youngest being destined to pursue the associated career of lawyer, statesman, and historian, which, with no other ambition on his part than for usefulness, will long hold him in the public memory.

His years, to thirteen, were spent in Huntington, when he was sent for tuition to the Rev. Mr. Talmage, of Brookhaven, with whom he continued two years. At fifteen, he went to Fairfield, Conn., where he continued one year, and at sixteen entered Princeton College, N. J., then under the Presidency of the learned Dr. Witherspoon. Here he continued four years, and pursued a full course of classical studies. He is said, though so young, to have taken the first position in his class, and to have graduated with the highest honors. He was then chosen a tutor in the college, and continued such for five years, severely impairing his health by his duties and his devotion to general literature. In 1795, when twenty-six years old, and two years after he had left Princeton, he was elected to the Assembly of this State, from Suffolk County. He continued to serve for four years, taking an active and originative part in the business of the house. He introduced the bills for the formation of social libraries, relative to the Treasurer's office, when the office of Comptroller was first established, and a new organization of the Treasury Department was made. As chairman of a joint committee, he introduced the first general Highway Act, which has since prevailed in the State, with some amendments, and the exemption of a few counties which have secured special acts.

After leaving the Assembly, he spent a few years in forming a settlement on some lands which he owned in the northern part of Johnstown. While here, in 1802, at thirty-two years of age, he married Catharine Huyek, whose parents were from Kinderhook. This young lady was born November 18, 1785, and died July 18, 1803, the year after her marriage, at the early age of eighteen, leaving an infant son who survived her but three days.

A friend writes: "I am not positive that this lady died *in* Johns-



## VII

town. Her death was very sudden, while they were on a journey through some wilderness in Montgomery County. He had to bury her without any *civilized* assistance. This incident had the effect to partly unbinge his mind; some supposed it produced occasional insanity, but I doubt whether the affection went to that extent."

This sudden affliction, after a union founded upon the warmest sentiments of love and admiration, is known to have made a profound impression upon the deeply impressible and affectionate nature of Mr. Wood, to have solemnized him to a stronger sense of duty in this life, and elevated his thoughts of the future.

In 1804, he was offered the place of Principal in the Academy at Esopus, at a salary of \$500, and in 1805, he was chosen a Professor in Union College, Schenectady, at \$800. Each of these positions he declined. Determining to pursue the law as a profession, he entered the office of Daniel Cady, Esq., of Johnstown. He was admitted to the Supreme Court on the 15th February, 1810, his license being dated on that day, and signed by the Hon. James Kent, then Chief Justice of that Court.

He was made a Master in Chancery March 2d, 1810, Daniel D. Tompkins being Governor; a solicitor in Chancery May 25, 1813, Hon. John Lansing then being Chancellor.

Immediately after his admission, a partnership was proposed to him by his legal instructor, Daniel Cady, which he accepted. It continued till the spring of 1813. Besides attending to the business of the office, he found time to take part in public affairs, and contributed largely to the columns of the *Montgomery Republican*, then a very influential journal. In the spring of 1813, he returned to Huntington, and there practised his profession. In November, 1817, he was elected by the people of his district (the First Congressional District) as their Representative in the XVIth Congress, and took his seat March 4, 1819. Here he was continued for five successive terms—the XVIth, XVIIth, XVIIIth, XIXth, and XXth Congresses—a period of ten years, which includes the latter half of Mr. Monroe's first term, the whole of his second, and the whole of the term of John Quincy Adams. In 1828, after declining a re-nomination, he was persuaded to stand, by the strongly expressed desires of his constituents. In this election he was defeated by Hon. James Lent, by 3105 votes against 2831, and served his last term in 1829.

## VIII

During the most of his time in Congress, he was on the Library Committee, which, though an unpretentious committee, attracting little public notice, was well suited to his tastes, and upon which his knowledge of books and literature enabled him to be extremely useful. His strict views of duty did not allow him to neglect any of the public business while he was there.

His principal speeches while in the House were :

On the question of admitting Missouri into the Union, delivered February 14, 1820. He spoke upon the amendments involving the exclusion of slavery. This amendment he sustained in a learned, earnest, and thorough argument, in the course of which his convictions against slavery as a moral and political element, were decisively expressed.

January 21, 1824: He spoke against the resolution that Congress ought to provide by law for defraying the expenses incident to the appointment of an Agent or Commissioner to Greece, whenever the President should deem it expedient to make such appointment. He opposed this resolution in a speech which is perhaps the most brilliant of his Congressional performances. In this he shows with great foresight and power of reasoning, the dangers of speedy dissolution, if the United States should intervene as the arbiter and champion of Liberty all over the world, instead of keeping at home and promoting it by just principles and moral example. A learned gentleman, elsewhere alluded to, who represented the same district in Congress with distinction, says, "His speech on the subject of sending aid to the Greeks, was a very able one, and excited very general applause. I heard it greatly applauded in Washington many years after it had been delivered in Congress."

April 2, 1824, his speech on the Tariff. In this, he argues with great force and clearness the desirableness of protection to American manufactures, and particularly the policy of being independent of other nations in regard to articles of which we might be deprived in case of war. Upon this point, the following sentence is an axiom which recent events have made peculiarly worthy of attention :

"The establishments necessary for the fabrication of clothing and arms, should be introduced at any sacrifice. No imaginary advantage to be derived from cheaper productions, would compensate for the mischiefs that would result from the want of the means of self-subsistence and self-defence in time of war."

## IX

May 14, 1826. On the resolutions of Mr. McDuffie, that the Constitution ought to be amended so as to prevent the election of President and Vice-President from devolving on Congress; and that a uniform system of voting by Districts ought to be established in all the States, the number of Districts in each State to equal the number of Senators and Representatives to which such State may be entitled in Congress, and each District having one vote.

These resolutions Mr. Wood opposed, as having a tendency to deprive the States of power, and augment the power and influence of the General Government. His analysis of the Constitution, and discrimination of the differing powers of the National and State Governments, are masterly.

April 5, 1826. On the resolution that it was expedient to appropriate the funds necessary to enable the President of the United States to send Ministers to the Congress of Panama, and the amendment of Mr. Mc Lane, of Delaware, that the Ministers who might be sent should attend in a diplomatic character merely, and not be authorized to discuss any proposition of alliance between this country and the Spanish American Government, Mr. Wood sustained the Resolution, and opposed the Amendment. He held that it was sound policy to cultivate the best relations of friendship and commerce with the Spanish American nations; and that the President and the Senate having agreed to send Ministers, the House had no right to interfere with the treaty-making power in the manner proposed by the Amendment. Incidentally, he discusses the whole question with the broadest comprehension of all its relations.

Each of his speeches is a series of distinct propositions, thoroughly fortified by ancient and modern precedents and examples. There are in them no appeals to passion or prejudice, nor the most distant allusion to any constituency less broad than the Union. They are succinct and pointed, evincing most diligent and careful preparation, and read like treatises or essays.

There are no speeches of the time more valuable for a full, clear, and fair exposition of the phase of the subject he intends to discuss.

It is difficult to say when he first began to gather materials for his "Sketch." It is probable that he was engaged in this work some eight or ten years before he considered it completed. Very few, not accustomed to historical explorations, can comprehend the time and labor required to ascertain facts, to weigh properly their

importance, and give them their true place in the narrative. The mind of Silas Wood was too faithful to stop short of the fullest endeavor. It was industrious, comprehensive, patient, eager, and analytical. He was constant in the pursuit of any information he required, and when it was obtained, it was subjected to the most thorough sifting, none but the vital parts being retained. Whatever other histories of the Island have been or may be, this Sketch has not been and will not be exceeded as a work of thorough labor, faithful discrimination, and honest judgment.

I add here a letter to his brother historian, Benjamin F. Thompson, Esq., alluding to the sources of authority consulted by him :

HUNTINGTON, August 6, 1841.

“DEAR SIR:—It may be of some benefit for you to know the sources from which I derived the facts in my Sketch of the First Settlement of Long-Island.

“1. I in person examined the Clerks’ Offices of every town on the Island, a number of them twice, and one or more of them three times.

“2. The offices of the various counties three times.

“3. The office of the Secretary of State twice, particularly in relation to the early Dutch Records translated by Vanderkemp; the Journals of the Provincial Congress; the Records of the Governor and Council, under the Colony, and the Records of the first Assemblies.

“4. The Records of the Dutch Church in New-York, and, directly or indirectly, of other churches; also the early records of the different Courts.

“5. The N. Y. City Library, the Library of the Historical Society, New-York, and the Congressional Library, Washington; Howard’s Collection of the Records of the New-England Colonies; the Collection of the Historical Society of Massachusetts; Cotton Mather’s *Magnalia*; Trumbull’s History of Connecticut, and all, or almost all the histories which have been written in New-England relative to the early settlement of those States, with the biographical sketches of the first settlers, the most of which I found in the library of Congress.

“I obtained considerable information relative to our first ancestors, from Winthrop’s Journal, Mather’s *Magnalia*, Hubbard’s His-



tory of New-England, Trumbull's History of Connecticut, and the catalogues of the early colleges.

"6. I also got friends and correspondents to examine the records of the Colony of Connecticut, of the Colony of Rhode Island, of the General Court of Massachusetts, of the towns of Concord, Fairfield, and Newark.

"7. I also had recourse to family records, old wills and deeds, to the inscriptions on tombstones in the old burial grounds, and in a few, but very few instances, to family traditions. I admitted no fact not supported by some one or other of these authorities, although it may be that in a few instances, as in that of Mr. Denton, I may have been misled by them.

"Respectfully Yours,  
"SILAS WOOD."

B. F. THOMPSON, Esq.

When the distant points are considered at which these authorities had to be reached, it must be for those who have performed similar labors, to appreciate the devotion of the author, and the sacrifices made by him to confer this gift upon the people of his native Island.

Mr. Thompson, whose History is very valuable for its details, and accumulates a large body of minute modern information, with much of personal memoir and anecdote, gratified his own feelings and sense of justice, by dedicating his first edition to Silas Wood, whose work, more closely limited to the early settlements, may be said to be dissolved and absorbed in the two respectable volumes of Mr. Thompson, with but slight modifications. Mr. Wood, while aiding Mr. Thompson by every means in his power, requested that the dedicatory compliment should be omitted from the second edition. It was from no disrespect to Mr. Thompson, but the result of modesty and self-abnegation. Mr. Wood was always characterised by modesty, simplicity, and plainness. When Mr. Thompson's books were published, he was endeavoring more than ever to strip from himself every "robe of pride," and to "clothe himself with humility."

From June 12, 1818, until some time in 1821, he was District Attorney of Suffolk County, by appointment of De Witt Clinton, Governor.

In December, 1829, he took for his second wife Elizabeth, daugh-



ter of Josiah Smith, of Long Swamp. By a mysterious Providence, he had by this, as by his former marriage, but one child, who died also in early infancy. He was thus left with no descendants to inherit his lands, or to enjoy that better patrimony of the public respect for his character and labors.

His "Sketch" was promulgated in three editions, all of which were printed and published in Brooklyn, by Col. Alden Spooner; the first in 1824, in 66 pages, octavo; the second in 1826, in 112 pages; the third in 1828, in 183 pages. The first edition was of 250 copies; the second and third of but 100 copies, each—which last were ordered by its conscientious writer, in order to do fuller justice to the memory of General Woodhull, by the ampler memoir in the Appendix.

This book, now so rare, and commanding so high a price, was of very slow sale. The sheets of several copies remained unclaimed in the hands of the binder, until a year or two ago, when they were discovered by a mousing owl of the L. I. Historical Society, and "snapped up." The views of the author—who himself paid the principal expenses of the printing—were amply satisfied in sending his copies to an appreciative few on the Island and elsewhere, knowing that in good time the tree he had so carefully planted and pruned, would produce fruit which the coming generations would enjoy.

In the Spring of 1830, Silas Wood formally relinquished his professional pursuits and public life, and determined to devote himself to meditations which had long pressed themselves upon his mind as of higher import than earthly ambitions. One inducement to withdraw from the toils of his profession might have been the fundamental change which took place in the law system of the State, by substituting the partial Codification, termed the Revised Statutes, for the great body of the Common Law, to which the older practitioners had grown accustomed. Certain it is, that this great reform affected Silas Wood disagreeably. He was too old to adapt himself to the changes. The writer, then a student, recollects his observations on the subject. He remembers very well the pleasant and jocular tone in which he said, "it may do very well for you young folks, but as for us old fellows, we might as well give up!" He did give up, sold his library, and was no longer seen in the courts.

### XIII

Again, there were some things in the fashions of politics which as little suited him. A sect of politicians was desirous of his leadership. These would not nominate without certain pledges. To a man of the crystalline honor and purity of Silas Wood, the whole system of pledges was disgusting and revolting. He refused to answer a schedule of questions submitted to him, saying that he was no seeker of office, and if his public character was not the assurance and guarantee needed, he did not need the party who sought him. He was an old-fashioned actor, whose pure style was no longer in vogue, and who was at least free from the common error of loitering too late upon the public stage.

These, with other recollections more grateful, linger in the mind of the writer, whose acquaintance with Silas Wood began in 1824, when the writer was about fourteen years old, and Mr Wood was in Brooklyn, superintending the publication of his first edition. Can the writer ever forget the quiet cordiality and simplicity with which, from the moment of meeting, he put himself entirely upon easy terms with a boy who beheld him for the first time, and held this boy enchanted with pleasant stories, and simple problems in science, intended to entertain the mind, and to call into exercise its practical qualities? I perfectly recollect, among other things, a sort of West Point disquisition, in which he demonstrated to me, with pencil upon paper, the force of certain projectiles, and described the "parabolic curves" they would make in passing through the air, till they descended upon their destined object. If the writer could have imagined what he has since witnessed, he would have taken these lessons more to heart. He must have been an admirable teacher.

The writer never could lose the feeling of right to his fellowship. A little while after his announced retirement into absolute seclusion, his stoppage of his newspapers, and sale of his library, the writer, while on a business errand to Huntington, ventured to break in upon his old friend. Did he not find him changed? Not a whit! Yes, a little, and that was as to his exterior garb. Plain as he always was, his attire was now the perfection of disregard of dress—the very costume of one who had ceased to care for the exterior things of life and men. But he doffed his slouched hat impulsively—dragged his visitor into his antique, unpainted, low-roofed, shingled house, and commenced to talk by the hour. All

#### XIV

his familiar friends agree that there were few better talkers than Silas Wood. There have been some, like Coleridge, who were more bold, imaginative, and sparkling, but few were so clear, affectionate, and persuasive. Some cotemporaries of Silas Wood yet live, who will agree with me that few men of his time could so enchain a friend by the dexterity and charm of his conversation. Conversation with him was not monologue. It was a justly harmonized dialogue. It was sympathetic, delicate, reciprocal, inquisitive, suggestive. He drew his colloquist out in the best way—giving him every motive and opportunity for the fullest expression.

But there must have been more than the changes in law and politics, to induce the retirement into seclusion of such a man as Silas Wood. His mind always clear as to the Divine source of Light and Consolation, undoubtedly turned implicitly in that direction from poignant afflictions and disappointments of the tenderest character. Besides, at sixty years old, it was time to part with earthly ambitions. It would not have been unlike his chastened tastes and sentiments, if he had early made it a part of his plan of life to retire at sixty, and by confining himself to books of religion and moral science, and to his farm,

"To husband out life's taper to the close,  
And keep the flame from wasting by repose."

Certain it is that he did close up, as far as was easily practicable, without assuming the character of a hermit, every avenue of the external world, particularly that wide avenue of the newspaper, and exchanged his law books for an excellent and profound selection of works on theology. To the Holy Scriptures and these works, he gave all his leisure time for reading.

I have his catalogue before me. It comprises one hundred and eighty-two works, admirably well selected. It is headed: "Religious books' belonging to the Library of Silas Wood," and classified:

"The Holy Bible, Commentaries on it, and works in vindication of the truth, inspiration, and doctrines of it."

"Books connected with the Bible, and illustrating the History of the Bible and of the Church."

"Sermons and Treatises."

"Practical Works."

"Biography."

Among these books are four editions of the Bible, Patrick and

Louth's "Commentaries," "Henry on the whole Bible," Scott, Newton "on the Prophecies," Shuckford's "Connection of Sacred and Profane History," Prideaux's "Connection of the Old and New Testament," Witherspoon's, Edwards's, Bellamy's, Dwight's, Davis's, Walker's Works, &c., &c. The value attached to these, at a low cost, is \$317 75.

The most of these books he bequeathed to the Presbyterian Church and congregation of Sweet Hollow, near Huntington. This was an old congregation, but organized under the General Church Act, on the 24th of June, 1843.

Silas Wood was, in appearance, a little above the average height, say five feet ten inches high, of a brownish complexion, weighing 160 or 170 pounds. He was erect in carriage, with broad shoulders and fine forehead. The expression of his countenance was amiable, but indicative of great firmness and decision. In conversation, he was more animated than in public speaking. His features then sparkled with the various and unreserved play of his mind, not restrained by any weight of public responsibility. In his younger days, and during his political career, he was neat and plain in his attire, but in his latter years quite negligent in this respect. A leading lawyer in Suffolk says, "he came to my wedding (in his later years) in a handsome suit of black broadcloth, but his shirt-bosom and cravat were much worn and frayed out." The same gentleman also writes: "In taste he was a great admirer of female beauty, and frequently entertained my sisters with minute descriptions of the belles of Washington. He was exceedingly fluent in conversation, always entertaining, and generally instructive."

"When I commenced the practice of my profession, Mr. Wood was the conceded head of the Suffolk County Bar. He was very potential both with the Court and Juries, not so much on account of any extensive knowledge of the principles of law, or readiness in their application, as by reason of his deservedly high general character, and his plausible address.

"Mr. Wood was firm in his political sentiments, but by no means a warm partizan. He could discern the errors in his own party as well as those of his political opponents. His habit of voting for what he approved, without reference to party, induced De Witt Clinton to compare him to the pendulum of a clock—first on one side and then on the other."



## XVI

The same gentleman sends an encomium on his Greek speech, (which we have quoted in another place), and apropos of this speech, which was widely approved, tells the following anecdote, which affords a hint to ladies who would pay a literary compliment : “ On an occasion when Mr. Wood was to pass the night at his house, the ladies procured a copy of this speech, and took care to place it so that it would be certain to salute his eye with the look of an intimate friend of the household. If the learned and agreeable guest, who had disciplined his mind against most forms of flattery, had nevertheless been susceptible to so delicate a compliment, it would have lost something of its flavor by his discovery, that *the leaves were uncut*.”

Another intimate friend, and for some time a cotemporary at the bar, gives the following hints :—

“ The life of Silas Wood was of such an even tenor, while residing in this County, that I think it will be difficult to find any very prominent incidents—any strongly illustrative of character. Whoever sketches his life will, I think, be confined to a delineation of character. I cannot attempt this—it would be quite out of my vocation.

“ Any person, on a slight acquaintance, would have noticed his naturalness and simplicity, almost childlike ; in this respect to be compared, I suppose, with the late Chancellor Kent.

“ His pure unselfishness, and untiring industry in meeting any claim for information or assistance, whether professional or otherwise, were remarkable. His aim seemed to be to oblige, and to do good, with little regard to personal sacrifice.

“ To collect facts with relation to the early condition of estates—the pedigree of families—as well as the early history of the country, was with him a passion. In search of these he would travel from one end of the county to the other, in his plain box-wagon, and as plain in his personal appearance.

“ A relation of his, a counsellor-at-law, with his wife (a daughter of old Gov. Ellsworth, of Connecticut), when on the Island, called upon him at his residence in West Hills—a very ancient structure. They were surprised at the contrast between his public reputation and his private style of life.

“ No person's visits were more welcome than his ; they were always too short. His memory was a store-house of facts, on al-



## XVII

most every subject, and always at his command ; and there were few social treats so rich, as a call even, from Silas Wood.

"I do not believe that he ever made an effort to procure office for himself. He did not belong to the dominant political party here ; and yet, when subjection to party dictation was regarded as of unquestionable obligation, the people sent him to Congress. It was an impulsive recognition of his personal worth, which, for the time, thrust aside all party calculations.

"I am inclined to believe that he was a lover of order and method in all his business. A neighbor of his once said to me, 'if Silas Wood should see a spear of his grass bent down, he would straighten it up.'

"His perfect integrity was never doubted. He was correct in his moral conduct. He was subject to fits of asthma, during which, for nights in succession, he could not lie down. In a few instances, in such cases, he became overcome with liquor, taken as a stimulant, so as to lose all self-control, and this seemed to be the effect on him of the first excitement. This spot on his disk was transient, and not to be noticed."

A biography would be but a eulogy, if the spots upon character and the frailties of poor human nature were not fairly exhibited. I have taken care, therefore, to put in this sketch all that could be learned of the peculiarities, weaknesses, and inadvertencies of one of the purest of Long-Island men.

Another learned and able lawyer, who has grown old at the Suffolk bar, says of him :

"He was at Riverhead in 1825, when I made my *debut* at the bar. We then became acquainted, and he appeared, afterward, much interested in me as a young lawyer of the county. He was a man of very general knowledge, and I always felt profited in his company. I am sure no lawyer was ever more highly esteemed by the mass of the people, for candor and honesty. His personal popularity in the county was very great."

One, his near neighbor, and who and whose father now deceased, were always intimate friends, sends me more valuable facts than could have been gleaned from any other source.

From this source, I learn that he gave, by will, direction to his executors, to burn all his "writings," which direction was faithfully executed, so far as any of his manuscripts or papers were in their

## XVIII

possession. A few of these in some way escaped discovery, and were discovered in the researches for this Memoir.

The same friend writes :

“ As to his stature, my recollections are, that he was rather more than medium height, say five feet ten, to six feet, broad shoulders, fine forehead, and when in his prime he must have been a man of fine appearance. I have not language at command to describe the animated expression of his flashing eyes and beaming countenance when he became interested even on ordinary topics. I never heard him at the bar, nor in the National nor State Councils; but it is easy to imagine how he must have warmed up with any great topic which engaged his thoughts and feelings. He spoke rapidly, and his gesticulation was quick and earnest, rather than measured or dignified. I know it was my father's opinion that he stood at the head of the bar of Suffolk.”

Another anecdote is in several points characteristic :—

“ From a high point near the residence of his youth, at West Hills, he had often looked upon the Sound, and the blue line of the main land beyond on the one side, and the broad Atlantic on the other. When he came to hear Hempstead Harbor Hill, (whose recorded elevation is 319 feet above the level of the Sound) claimed as the highest ground on the Island, he felt assured that a point at West Hills was higher. This is a spot denominated “ Oakley's High Hill Field,” which afterwards came into the possession of Zebulon Rogers. In October, 1825, he called to his aid an experienced and accurate surveyor, Mr. Abel Ketcham, who took all the elevations from the water level of the Sound, and determined, as Mr. Wood had foreseen, that this point was  $354\frac{1}{2}$  feet above such level, and therefore  $35\frac{1}{2}$  feet higher than the Harbor Hill. This position of vantage to his native hills was evidently gratifying to Mr. Wood. It touched a feeling of pride and romance in his character. The town records were, in 1832, in the custody of the late Moses Rolph. Mr. Wood in that year, on the 22d September, took the pains to have the field notes of this survey, with a certificate signed with his name, entered on the records of the town, by pasting the same firmly in the book of town minutes.

“ Mr. Wood was always deeply interested in the welfare of young people, and constantly gave them valuable advice. He would adapt his manner and conversation to the companionship and en-

tainment of children, and was always a welcome guest at every child's home.

"If he had any marked peculiarity, it was his precision. He was in all things a lover of order and regularity, observing punctuality himself, and enforcing it in others.

"After he had made up his mind to join the Presbyterian Church, he was 'all Presbyterian.' Several anecdotes could be told to show his tenacity and strictness in regard even to the forms of the Church, and his strict guardianship against any looseness of practice or latitudinarianism of doctrine. In particular, he was anxious that the councils of the church should be actively maintained. An anecdote to this purport occurs: The Synod of New-York was to hold its annual meeting at Sag Harbor, I think in the year 1843. It was then a long drive from our part of the Island; the cars did not run through, as now, to Greenport, and the journey was to be performed with horses. For this reason, or a better one, the elder appointed by Session could not go. Mr. Wood ascertained there was likely to be no lay representative, and though only a private member of the church, the thought of this possible neglect jarred painfully upon his feelings. He instantly took counsel with the members of the Session, came into my house and read a severe lesson upon the propriety, nay, the necessity, of lay representation, and before four o'clock in the afternoon one of the elders, with carpet-bag packed, was on his way, with the pastor, towards Sag Harbor."

In addition to his Sketch of the Early Settlements on Long Island, Mr. Wood prepared a valuable sketch of the town history of Huntington, entitled "A Geography of the Town of Huntington, with a brief history of its first settlement, and political condition to the end of the Revolution," printed at Washington, in 1824, by Davis & Force, which is in 30 octavo pages. The edition was doubtless very limited, and a part of it was burned in the house of Moses Rolph, his neighbor.

The miniature from which the engraving is made (with which this Sketch is embellished,) is in the first style of art, painted by a master-hand, on ivory, and was probably taken when Mr. Wood was a member of Congress, and forty-five years old or thereabouts. There is a so-called likeness, in profile, among the members of the Legislature in 1798, published in the Documentary History of the State, but his friends fail to trace in it the slightest resemblance.

A gentleman of New York, formerly from Huntington, says, that when a young man he knew Silas Wood; that while employed as clerk in a store in New York, Mr. Wood called, in his absence, and left a book for him. It was "Locke on the Human Understanding," and was the first book which set him to thinking.

It is supposed that a great portion of his later writings, which were destroyed by his direction, were upon theological topics.

In the year 1832, when he was sixty-three years of age, he made a public profession of religion, and connected himself with the Presbyterian Church in Huntington.

I quote here from the obituary notice, from a friendly and competent hand, (understood to be that of the Rev. Mr. McDougall, his pastor,) in the Long Islander, just after his death, from which I have already largely drawn :

"He was a warm advocate of early religious education, and strongly attached to catechetical instruction. He often adverted with interest to the former days, when parents were in the habit of employing part of every Sabbath day in training their children to this exercise. He was very partial to standard theological works. So familiar was he with the writings of Witherspoon and Edwards, that when unable to read for himself, he could name the page containing the subject which he wished to have read to him.

"But if we judge of his estimation of books from his familiarity with them, we must conclude that the Bible exceeded all others, for with no book was he more familiar. The old pocket Bible, which had been his companion since the days of his boyhood, bearing the date of 1783, exhibits signs not only of age, but of faithful use. He had the New Testament almost by heart, and was able at any time to turn directly to chapter and verse. It was not until late in life that he made a public profession of religion, though he had for a long time before manifested a lively interest in the affairs of the church."

He had been for some time aware of his approaching end, and made the most minute preparations for the comfort of his wife after his departure. As illustrative of this kind trait, as well as of his habits of order, a friend relates that he called to him the man accustomed to cart his wood, and directed him after his decease to bring in the wood at a particular gate, to leave it always in a designated place, to have it cut of convenient size, and to give Mrs. Wood as little trouble as possible.







His niece says, "he possessed his faculties unimpaired to the last, except that the night before he died he was a little flighty. Just before he died he called the family around him, but did not address them."

A friend says, "I was in to see him the morning before he died. He then appeared to be calm, collected and resigned."

His decease took place March 2d, 1847, in the 78th year of his age. For some years previously he had been dreadfully troubled with the asthma, which often compelled him to sit on his chair all night, and drove him to the use of stimulants as an alleviate. His immediate death was hastened by a severe fall which kept him to his bed for eight months. He is buried in the village of Huntington, in the Old Hill burial ground, which adjoins the Presbyterian parsonage. In this ground, where rest the earliest of the settlers of Huntington, Benjamin Thompson, the Tory General (afterward made Count Rumford by the Duke of Bavaria), encamped his troops during the Revolution, and made sad havoc with the grave stones, many of which were converted into ovens, and subjected to base uses and wanton destruction.

His earlier ancestors are buried on a knoll a few rods north of the old house at West Hills.

As a statesman he was wise and far-sighted, and no man of his time was more free from party bias or prejudice; as a lawyer, highly respectable, though his ability in this department was subordinated to his career as a politician, and his tastes as a scholar and historian. As a historian he was impartial, patient, industrious, and devoted to the truth. No man exceeded him in love for his native Island, and no man could have been more careful to leave a reputation which would honor it.

### ADVERTISEMENT.

THE object of the republication of this work, is to supply some deficiencies, particularly in relation to the colony government, and the sketch of General Woodhull; the materials for which were obtained from the Secretary's office.

A brief statement of the inferior courts on Long-Island has been added in the Appendix, to illustrate the changes of the law relative to them, with the names of the Judges and Clerks, to which I have also added the names of the members of Assembly from the various Counties on Long-Island, from 1691 to 1776.

I have also given a sketch of the biography of Colonel William Smith, and William Nicholls, Esqrs., which is identified with the history of that period.

I embrace this occasion to express my acknowledgments to the Secretary and Deputy Secretary, the Clerk of the Supreme Court at New-York, to the Clerks of the several counties and towns on Long-Island, for free access to their offices, and to all those gentlemen who have aided me by their researches, or have contributed to the facts contained in this work.

A SKETCH  
OF THE  
FIRST SETTLEMENT OF LONG-ISLAND, &c.

---

*The state of the Country.*

At the time of the first settlement of Long-Island, it appears that the western part of it, if not the whole, was in a great measure bare of timber.

The Indians here, as every where else where they were settled, annually burnt over the woods, in order to clear the land, to provide for the deer and other game.

There are numerous facts to prove that, at the time of the first settlement of the Island, the woods were destitute of underbrush, and that the large trees were so scarce that it was deemed necessary to take measures for their preservation.

The first settlers in every town commenced their improvements without any previous clearing. They generally enclosed large tracts of land by a common fence, for planting, and also for pasturing such part of their flock as they did not wish to run at large. In 1646 the people of the town of Gravesend, by a vote of the first town meeting, held in the town, ordered every inhabitant to make twenty poles of fence, to enclose a common field of corn; and in 1648, voted in like manner to make a common pasture for their calves.

Similar regulations were made in Newtown, in Hempstead, in Huntington, and probably in most, if not all the towns on the Island. In 1654, the town of Southold passed a resolution, that no person should cut trees or sell wood from their common lands, for pipe staves, or heading, or other purposes, to any person not being a townsman, "without the town's liberty." In 1659, the town of Huntington, by a vote of town meeting, resolved that no timber should be cut for sale within three miles of the settlement, under the penalty of five shillings for every tree. In 1660 they made an exception of oak timber for pipe staves; but in

1668 the magistrates, after stating their apprehensions that the town was in danger of being ruined by the destruction of its timber, ordered that no timber should be cut, for transportation, within three miles of the settlement, under the penalty of five shillings for every tree; and forbid strangers cutting any timber, within the limits of the town, under the like penalty.

In 1660, the town of Oysterbay passed a similar resolution.

In 1664, the town of Southampton voted that no timber should be made into pipe staves, to be carried out of the town, under the penalty of twenty shillings a tree.

In 1668, the town of Newtown voted that no one should carry any timber to the water side for transportation, under the penalty of twenty shillings a load.

The trees in the woods were so thin and sparse, that they abounded with feed, and the settlers depended on them for pasture for such cattle as were not needed for domestic purposes.

In 1658 the town of Hempstead employed a herdsman to attend their cattle. There are various resolutions of this town for a series of years, to the same effect. They drove their cattle as far as Cow-Neck to pasture, and it is supposed to have taken its name from that circumstance.\*

In 1665, the town of Huntington, by a vote of town meeting, ordered that all the young and dry cattle belonging to the town, should be driven to Horse-Neck, to pasture, after the second day of June ensuing.

In 1666 the town of Gravesend employed a herdsman to attend their cattle that run at large, during the summer season.

By neglecting the Indian practice of annual burnings, in a few years young timber and underbrush increased so as to injure the feed in the woods.

In 1668, the town of Huntington, at a town meeting, voted that every male over sixteen, should assemble when warned by the men who were appointed for that purpose, to cut down brush or underwood, when it should be thought a fit time to destroy it, under the penalty of five shillings a day for neglect.

\* The openness of the country was very favorable to the increase of stock, and the great plain around the town of Hempstead is peculiarly so, and their cattle became quite numerous within a few years after the settlement of the town.

In 1658, the people of Hempstead had 84 cows, which brought them 82 calves that year. In 1659, the town consisted of 62 families, and it appears from the accounts of their herds-men for that year, that they had 629 head of cattle of all sorts.



7th October, 1672. The Governor and court of assize, by an order, after stating that the feed for horses and cattle in the woods on Long-Island had decayed by the increase of brush and underwood, directed the inhabitants from sixteen to sixty, to turn out four days in every year, under the direction of the town officers, to cut out the brush and underwood, under the penalty of five shillings for every day's neglect.

In 1674, the town of Jamaica, by a vote of town meeting, resolved that every male upwards of sixteen, should go out two days in the year, at the time appointed for that purpose, to cut down brush about the town, under the penalty of five shillings for every day's neglect.

By similar evidence, it appears, that the pine plains were also at the time of the first settlement of the Island, in a great measure unincumbered with underbrush.

This state of the country was of immense advantage to the first settlers. Had they been obliged to encounter thick forests of large timber, and to wait the tardy returns of heavy clearings, the first emigrants would probably have perished by famine. The openess of the country—the quantity of land left unoccupied by the sparseness of the Indian population, and the rapid growth and nutritive quality of the corn found among the Indians, contributed essentially to the preservation, growth, and prosperity of the first settlers on Long Island.

*Of the interfering claims of the English and Dutch to Long-Island.*

The English and the Dutch both claimed Long-Island, on the ground of prior discovery.

On the discovery of America, it seems to have been adopted by the maritime nations of Europe, as a part of the conventional law of nations, that new discoveries should enure to the nation under whose authority they were made.\*

North America from 38 to 58 degrees of north latitude,

\* The Pope gave Spain and Portugal all the countries inhabited by infidels which they should discover. The other nations of Europe claimed the enjoyment of the same privilege, and for a long time the naked discovery of a country, without occupation or settlement, furnished the ground of an exclusive claim to an indefinite portion of the discovered country. The inconvenience and injustice of this doctrine by degrees lessened its force, till it has, by common consent, fallen into oblivion. In 1790, when the Spaniards, in pursuance of the old doctrine, had seized the ships of Great Britain at Nootka Sound, the ministry proposed an immediate resort to force for redress. Mr. Fox in support of the proposed measure, observed, "That in the present enlightened age, the absolute claims of territory by a grant from the Pope, is done away, as is the right of territory by discovery without absolute settlement. The taking possession by fixing up a cross, or any such mark of ceremony, is by the good sense of the present time not admitted, and that the only ground of right is absolute occupancy."

If this doctrine had prevailed in 1664, it might have altered the destiny of the Dutch province of New-Netherland.

was discovered in 1497, by Sebastian Cabot, in the service of the English, and various voyages were made to different parts of the coast by English navigators previous to the year 1606.

In 1606, King James, by letters patent, granted all that part of the continent which lay between 35 and 45 degrees of north latitude, to Sir Thomas Gates and others, with permission to divide themselves into two companies, the first to be called the London company, and the second the Plymouth company.

In 1607, the London company commenced a settlement in Virginia.

In 1609, the King granted a separate patent to the first company, extending from Point Comfort two hundred miles each way, and in length from sea to sea.

In 1620, the same King granted a separate patent to the second company, by the name of "the council established at Plymouth in the county of Devon for the planting, ruling, and governing of New England in America," for all that part of the continent lying between 40 and 48 degrees of north latitude, and extending from sea to sea. In virtue of this charter, which is usually called the New England patent, the council of Plymouth issued all the subordinate patents of the several colonies which were granted before it was surrendered to the crown, to wit, the Plymouth patent in 1623, that of Massachusetts in 1628, and that of Connecticut, 1631.\*

The same company, by order of Charles the First, on the 22d of April, in the 11th year of his reign, issued letters patent to William, Earl of Stirling, "Secretary of the Kingdom of Scotland," for the whole of Long-Island.

April 20, in the 12th year of Charles I., the Earl of Stirling executed a power of attorney to James Farret, to sell and dispose of lands on the Island, and the earliest purchases made by the English on the Island, were made or confirmed by authority derived from him.† A certified copy of this

\* In June, 1635, the Plymouth Company surrendered their charter to the Crown, and recommended that the whole country embraced by it should be divided into a number of provinces, each to be under the government of some Lord, and the whole to be under a Governor General, to be appointed by the Crown. But the plan was not adopted. Shortly after the dissolution of the Company, the King appointed the Archbishop of Canterbury, and some of the great officers of the Crown, a Board of Commissioners to regulate the affairs of the colonies: it does not appear that the Board ever proceeded to execute their trust, and the different parts of the country that had not been patented by the Plymouth Company, were after that period granted by letters patent of the King or his Governors.

† William Alexander was born in Scotland in 1581, was knighted by James VI of Scotland, and James I of England, 1614; obtained letters patent for Nova Scotia in 1621, was made Secretary of the Kingdom of Scotland in 1626, Peer of Scotland in 1630, and was created Earl

power of attorney, taken from the record of Massachusetts, is among the papers in the office of the clerk of the town of Southampton.

In 1609, Henry Hudson, an Englishman in the service of the Dutch, visited and explored the harbor of New-York, and the river which has since been called by his name.\*

In 1611, the merchants of Amsterdam sent out some ships with goods, and opened a trade with the natives.

In 1613, the Dutch were visited by the English from Virginia, and submitted to pay an acknowledgment to the crown of England.

In 1614, they received a reinforcement from Europe, erected a fort, and refused to submit to the English. The English in America did not think proper, or were not in a condition to renew their efforts to reduce or restrain the Dutch.

In 1615, they sailed up the North River and erected a fort on a small island, a short distance below Albany, and in a short time afterwards erected Fort Orange, at Albany, on the spot, as is supposed, where the mansion house of Simeon De Witt, the Surveyor General of the State of New-York now stands.

In 1621, the States General granted the Dutch West India Company an exclusive right to trade to America for twenty-four years, with various other privileges.

The Dutch seem at their first arrival, and for many years afterwards, to have had no other views in visiting the country than to engross the trade with the natives. It does not appear that they had then adopted any plan for the settlement and improvement of the country. No serious attempt at colonization appears to have been made till the latter part of Van Twiller's administration, who arrived in 1629, and was succeeded by Kieft in 1638.

The first purchase of the Indians on Long-Island that has been discovered, was in 1635, and the earliest deed for

of Stirling in 1633. He obtained a grant for Long-Island in 1635, and died in 1640. He was succeeded by his grandson, who died a few months after him, who was succeeded by his uncle Henry, who relinquished the grant of Long-Island to the Crown, or to the Duke of York, before the patent to him in 1664, in which it was inserted. The grant of Long-Island, to Lord Stirling, and the relinquishment of it to the Crown or to the Duke of York by his heirs, is recognized in the patent of Governor Nicoll to Constant Sylvester and Nathaniel Sylvester for Shelter Island, 31st May, 1666.

\* According to De Laet, Adrian Block, in 1614, sailed from New-Amsterdam, (now New-York) through the Sound to Cape Cod, and visited the intermediate coast and Islands. If so, he was the first who ascertained that Long-Island was separated from the main. In 1619, Thomas Dermer, in sailing from New-England to Virginia, passed through the Sound and confirmed the discovery of Adrian Block. In his journal he states, "we found a most dangerous cataract among small rocky Islands, occasioned by two unequal tides, the one ebbing and flowing two hours before the others."

land to individuals, is a patent from Governor Van Twiller to Andries Hedden and Wolphert Garritsen, for a tract of land in Amersfort, or Flatlands, bearing date of 6th June, 1636.

In 1643, Governor Kieft states that the Dutch settlements at that time, only extended 10 miles east and west, and seven miles north and south.

The first mention made of cattle, is a distribution made by Van Twiller in 1638.† Before this period, the Dutch establishments seem to have been principally, if not purely commercial, and were probably under the superintendence of a factor or commercial agent.

It seems that the claims of the Dutch were not limited to any definite portion of the country, and that they extended their claim with their purchases and settlements.

In 1661, Governor Stuyvesant complains to the directors of the West India Company, that they were without a patent to support their claim. The Dutch, in order to extend their claims to as much of the country as possible, at an early period made a purchase on the Delaware, and in 1633 on Connecticut river, and claimed the whole country between those two rivers.

The English a few months afterwards, also made a purchase on Connecticut river, and erected a house a few miles above Fort Hope, which had shortly before been erected by the Dutch. The English commenced a settlement at Saybrook in 1635, at Hartford in 1636, and at New-Haven in 1638, and continued to extend their settlements westward until they met the Dutch in Stamford, in 1640.

#### *Of the Settlement of the Island.*

Both powers endeavoured to strengthen their respective claims to the Island by extending their settlements there.

The two extremities of the Island were first settled; the west end under the Dutch, and the east end under the English.

The several settlements under the two powers were nearly cotemporary, and were all commenced within the compass of forty years.

Both the Dutch and English territories on Long-Island, were settled by villages or towns, nor was there any combi-

† June 4th, 1638, Governor Van Twiller let George Rapalje have two cows for four years then to be returned with half their increase, with the exception of a heifer, which he consented should be retained as a present to one of the daughters of Rapalje. This seems to have been a common mode of furnishing the settlers with stock.



nation of these into counties before the conquest of the English in 1664.

The extent of the towns in the English territory, and of the English towns in the Dutch territory, was regulated by the extent of their Indian purchases. The extent of the Dutch Towns was probably regulated by the extent of their grants from the Governor.

In the Dutch towns it seems that the lands were generally purchased by the Governor, and were by him granted to individuals. In the English towns in the Dutch territory, the lands were generally purchased of the natives by the settlers, with the consent of the Dutch Governor; and in the towns under the English, the lands were purchased of the natives by the settlers, originally with the consent of the agent of the Earl of Stirling; and after his death, the purchases of the Indians were made by the people of the several towns for their common benefit.\*

In cases of grants to companies by the Dutch Governor, the lands were divided by lot; and in all cases of purchase, the rights of individuals were deemed to be in proportion to their contribution to the purchase, or to the patent by which it was confirmed.

A single family of French protestants seems to have settled on the Island in the vicinity of New-York, as early as

\* The first purchase of Southold was made under the authority of New-Haven, and the purchase of Easthampton was made by the Governor of New-Haven and Hartford, and the lands were afterwards conveyed to the respective settlers of the two towns.

Lyon Gardiner was the sole proprietor of Gardiner's Island. Shelter Island was purchased by James Farrett, and after some intermediate conveyances in 1656, became vested in Nathaniel Sylvester, Constant Sylvester, and Thomas Middleton. Constant Sylvester resided in Barbadoes, and Thomas Middleton in England. During the period of the Dutch power, on the reconquest of the colony, the Dutch Governor, on the 28th April, 1674, by a formal act confiscated the rights of those two gentlemen, as public enemies, and on the 28th of August, sold the same to Nathaniel Sylvester for £500, for which he gave his bond. When it was ascertained that the Dutch must shortly leave the country, it appears, from a recital in the will of Nathaniel Sylvester, dated in 1679, reciting the confiscation and bill of sale, that the Governor sent a ship with fifty soldiers to Shelter Island, to collect the money due on the said bond. They landed on the Island, surrounded the house of Nathaniel Sylvester, and compelled him to pay them the amount of the bond. Smithtown was given to Lyon Gardiner by Wyandance, in 1659 by whom it was sold to Richard Smith, in 1663, and was confirmed by the Nissaquague Sachem in 1665.

William Nicolls was the original purchaser and sole proprietor of the greater part of Islip. Eaton's Neck was given to Governor Eaton by the Indians, and Winthrop's patent in like manner to Governor Winthrop. Exclusive of Judge Smith's purchases, and a few others, the other lands in the several towns in Suffolk County were purchased by the first settlers in common.

The lands in the occupancy of the Indians in the town of Southampton and Easthampton, belong to those towns respectively. The Indians have only a usufructuary property in them.

The peninsula of Montauk contains about 9000 acres, 1500 of which are timber, and 1000 water. It is divided into three fields; the first, or common lot, contains 6600 acres, the other two 1200 each. The Indians occupy one or other of the smaller fields as they choose, from the time of planting to the time of gathering corn, and have a right to keep fifty-two head of cattle or horses. The whole is divided into thirty-eight shares; each share entitles the proprietor to put fifty six head of cattle into the common field, the first week in April, and on the first of June to put twelve of the fifty-six into the fatting field. The fat cattle are taken away the first of November, and others the first of December. One horse is deemed equivalent to two cattle, or four calves, or seven sheep.



1625. In a family record in the hands of Gen. Johnson of Brooklyn, it is stated that the first child of George Jansen De Rapalje, was born at the Wallaboght that year; and it is a tradition among the Dutch that this was the first white child that was born on the Island.

This family, and perhaps a few others, may have thus early located themselves on the shores of the Island opposite New-York, but it is supposed that very few emigrants had yet arrived in the Dutch territories, whose object was the cultivation of the soil. The earliest deed for land in the town of Brooklyn, is a grant to Abraham Rycken in 1638; and the earliest deed on record, is a grant to Thomas Besker, in the year 1639, and the earliest grant for lands in Kings county that has been discovered, was in 1636.

This must be considered as the commencement of the Dutch settlements on Long-Island. There is no evidence that any direct and systematic efforts were made for this purpose, till this period.

In 1641, the Dutch Governor and Conneil, in order to strengthen their claim to the Island, consented that the English should settle there under their jurisdiction, on taking the oath of allegiance to the States General, and the Dutch West India Company.

The town of Gravesend, in Kings county, and the several towns of Hempstead, Flushing, Jamaica, and Newtown in Queens County, were originally settled by Englishmen on these conditions: The other towns in Kings County were settled by the Dutch, and all the other towns on the Island were settled under the English.

The first settlement under the English was made by Lyon Gardiner, on Gardiner's Island, in 1639, under a purchase made by him of the natives, which was confirmed by James Farret, agent of the Earl of Stirling, in 1640.

In October, 1640, the people of Southold commenced a settlement on a tract of land which had been purchased of the natives by the government of New-Haven.

In May, 1640, the English attempted to make a settlement on a tract of land on the east side of Great Neck, or on the west side of Cow Neck, in the town of North Hempstead, on the north side of the Island, which had been purchased of the natives by Daniel How, under an agreement with the agent of the Earl of Stirling; but were prevented by Kieft, the Dutch Governor, and the settlers removed to Southampton, purchased a tract of land of the natives, and

commenced a settlement there in December, 1640, which was the foundation of that town.\*

In 1642, the English advanced as far as Oysterbay, within the tract purchased by Captain How, and were broken up by the Dutch Governor. Some of the English planters were seized and imprisoned, and others driven from their settlements.

The line of division between the respective territories of the two powers was a constant source of contention between them, and the public harmony was interrupted by mutual complaints of encroachments on Long-Island, as well as on the main.

It was at length attempted to put an end to these complaints, and to secure peace and quiet on the borders, by definitively settling the boundaries between their respective territories.

May 19, 1643, the four New-England colonies, Plymouth, Massachusetts, Hartford, and New-Haven, formed a union for their mutual security, and the protection of the settlements that were connected with them.

Public affairs were transacted by two commissioners from each colony. All controversies between the English and the Dutch, were from that period, on the part of the English, managed by the commissioners of the united colonies.

\* By an agreement bearing date 17th April, 1640, James Farret, agent of the Earl of Stirling, authorized Daniel How, Job Payne, and others, their associates, to purchase lands and form a settlement on Long-Island, "with as full and free liberty both in church order and civil government, as the plantations in Massachusetts enjoyed."

By virtue of this agreement, Daniel How shortly after made a purchase of the natives on the Island, "Which extended from the eastern part of Oysterbay, to the western part of a bay called after him, How's bay, to the middle of the plains, being half the breadth of the Island," and immediately commenced a settlement in the western part of said purchase. May 13, 1640, Governor Kieft sent Cornelius Van Tienhoven, the Secretary, the under sheriff, a sergeant, and twenty-five soldiers, to Scout's bay, to break up the said settlement. The party set out the 14th and returned the 15th. They found the company, consisting of eight men and a woman with an infant, who had erected one house, and were engaged in erecting another. The party brought six of the men with them to the Governor, to wit, Job Sayre, George Wells, John Farrington, Philip Cartland, Nathaniel Cartland, and William Harcher, whom he confined, and examined on oath. On examination, it appeared that they came from Lynn, near Boston, and were brought to the Island by James Farret, in a vessel commanded by Daniel How, both of whom had returned to New-Haven. On the 19th these men, on signing an agreement to leave the place, were dismissed.

How's bay was the same as Scout's bay, and is the bay between Cow Neck and Great Neck, and so called in the ancient deeds for land adjoining it. Martin Garretson's bay is the bay between Great Neck and Little Neck, and is the boundary between Flushing and North Hempstead.

The settlement, therefore, must have been on the east side of Great Neck, or the west side of Cow Neck, and probably at the latter place. After their settlement at How's bay was broken up, Daniel How and his associates went to Southampton, contracted with the natives for the purchase of a tract of land there, and advanced them some part of the consideration to secure the bargain.

December 13, 1640, they settled the payment of the remaining part of the consideration, obtained a deed for the land, and commenced their settlement. They held their first town meeting the 6th of April, 1641, and their town meetings are regularly recorded from that period.

The acknowledgment to the Earl of Stirling, or his heirs, was fixed by Governor Winthrop, of Boston, in 1641, according to an agreement with James Farret, at four bushels of Indian corn, payable the last day of September, annually, at Southampton.

A treaty for the adjustment of differences, and the settlement of boundaries between the two powers, was negotiated by Mr. Bradstreet, of Massachusetts, and Mr. Prince, of Plymouth, on the part of the Commissioners, and by Thomas Willet and George Baxter, on the part of the Dutch Governor, at Hartford, the 19th of September, 1650.

By that treaty it was mutually agreed, with regard to the boundaries between the two powers on Long-Island, "That a line run from the westernmost part of Oysterbay, and so a straight and direct line to the sea, shall be the bounds betwixt the English and Dutch there. The easterly part to belong to the English, and the westernmost to the Dutch."

When Oysterbay came to be settled by the English, a dispute arose between them and the Dutch Governor, respecting the westernmost limits of the bay; and this, with the delay of the States General to ratify the treaty, furnished the Dutch Governor with a pretext for not fulfilling it.

In 1659, the directors of the West India Company ordered the Dutch Governor to erect a fort, or to build a block-house on their east bay, in order the more effectually to resist the encroachments of the English.

In 1661, the Governor informed them that he had not begun the fort on Long-Island, near Oysterbay, "because our neighbours lay the boundaries a mile and a half more westerly than we do; and the more as your honours are not inclined to stand to the treaty of Hartford," and although the treaty was ratified by the States General the 22d February, 1656, yet it seems that the Governor never wholly relinquished his claim of jurisdiction over that town, or a part of it.

In June, 1656, the commissioners of the United Colonies, in answer to a communication of the Dutch Governor, reproach him with still continuing to claim Oysterbay, in violation of the treaty of Hartford.

These disputes involved the people of Oysterbay in much difficulty and perplexity. To avoid giving offence to one power or the other, and to secure peace and quietness, they were compelled to observe a kind of neutrality between the contending parties.

December 30, 1660, they resolved by a vote of the people in Town meeting, that no person should intermeddle to put the town either under the Dutch or English, until the dif-

ference between them should be ended, under the penalty of £50 sterling.

January 8, 1662, they seem to have taken a more decisive part. They avowed their allegiance to the King of England, and resolved to defend any one who should be molested for exercising authority among them, at their common expense.

It is presumed that this town about this period, united with the other English towns on the Island east of Hempstead, in their voluntary submission to the jurisdiction of Connecticut.

*Of the order in which the several Towns on the Island were settled.*

The time of the settlement of the English towns, is to be collected from the dates of their respective purchases of the natives, and that of the Dutch towns from the grants of the Governor, or from the original records of their respective proceedings. From these, it appears that the first settlement of the several towns on the Island, was commenced at or near the time, and in the order following :

Brooklyn, - - - - -	1636
Flatlands, originally Amersfort, - - -	1636
Gardiners' Island, - - - - -	1639
Southold, - - - - -	1640
Southampton, - - - - -	1640*
Hempstead, - - - - -	1644
Gravesend, - - - - -	1645
Flushing, originally Vlissingen, - - -	1645
East Hampton, - - - - -	1648
Flat Bush, originally Midwout, - - -	1651
Shelter Island, - - - - -	1652
Huntington, - - - - -	1653
Oysterbay, - - - - -	1653
Brookhaven, - - - - -	1655
Newtown, originally Middleburgh, - - -	1655
Jamaica, originally Rustdorpe, - - -	1656
New-Utrecht, - - - - -	1657

\* Although a few settlements were first made by individuals in the Dutch territories, it was some years before the number was sufficient to require any political organization. Brooklyn, the largest of the Dutch villages, did not choose regular magistrates till 1646, though some kind of authority was established there before. On the contrary, Southold and Southampton were settled by regular organized societies, governed from their origin by laws and magistrates, with regular churches. A house for public worship was erected at Southampton previous to 1645, the first in the Dutch towns was commenced in 1654; so that although there were a few settlers in Brooklyn and Flatlands before 1640, they did not become towns till some years after; and the towns of Southold, Southampton, and probably Easthampton, were some years in advance of them in numbers, in organization, and social improvements.



Bushwick,	-	-	-	-	-	-	1660
Smithtown,	-	-	-	-	-	-	1663
Islip,	-	-	-	-	-	-	1666†

The lands in the several towns in Kings County were purchased by the Dutch Governor, or with his consent, and it is presumed wholly of the Canarsee tribe of Indians.

Jamaica was purchased of the Canarsee and Rockaway tribes.

Newtown was principally purchased of the Rockaway Indians.

Flushing was purchased by the Dutch Governor, it is believed, of the Matinecoc tribe of Indians.

Oysterbay was purchased of the Matinecocs.

Hempstead was purchased of the Rockaway, Merikoke and Marsapeague tribes.

Huntington was purchased of the Matinecoc, Marsapeague and Secatang tribe.

Smith Town was, by the Montauk sachem, Wyandance, given to Lyon Gardiner, who sold it to Richard Smith, to whom it was confirmed by the Nissaugague sachem.

Brookhaven was purchased of the Satauket and Patchogue tribes.

South Old was purchased of the Corchaugs.

Islip was purchased of the Secataugs.

South Hampton was purchased of the Shinecoc tribe.

East Hampton was purchased of the Shinecoc, Corchaug, Manhasset, and Montauk tribes.

Shelter Island was purchased of the Manhasset tribe.

#### *Of Trade.*

On the first settlement of the Island the surplus produce was wanted by the new settlers; during this period they had little trade but among themselves, money was very scarce, contracts were made in produce, and business was carried on by barter and exchanges; contracts for the sale of land as well as others were made in produce.

† Some confusion exists in the dates of this period, and an event may have taken place a year before or a year after it is stated to have happened, but the error in time can rarely exceed a year.

When the computation by the christian era was introduced, the commencement of the year was fixed on the day of the annunciation or Incarnation of Christ, which was placed on the 25th of March, and so continued in England and her dominions, till the alteration of the style in 1752, when by an act of Parliament it was enacted, that eleven days should be stricken out of the month of September, and that the 3d should be dated 14th, and one day added to February every fourth year, to conform their chronology to that of other nations of Europe, who had introduced a similar alteration some years before, in order to correct the error arising from the precession of the equinoxes; and that the year should commence on the 1st of January instead of the 25th of March. Before this time, it had been usual, to preserve a correspondence of dates with those of other nations, to give a double date from the 1st of January to the 25th of March. Thus February the 8th, 1721, was written February the 8th, 17<sup>22</sup>; the omission of the lower number would cause an error of a year.



In 1658, the town of Hempstead agreed to pay the herdsmen who attended their cattle, twelve shillings sterling a week, payable in butter, wheat, corn and oats, at stipulated prices.

In 1659, the same town allowed six bushels of corn for killing a wolf.

In 1659, the town of East Hampton, agreed to give Thomas James, their Minister, £60 a year, "in such pay as men raise, as it passes from man to man."

In 1663, the town of Jamaica, contracted with Zachariah Walker, their minister, to give him £60 a year, payable in wheat and corn, at fixed prices.

In 1664, the town of Gravesend, contracted to give a man and his assistant, 600 guilders, to guard their cattle that run at large during the summer season, to be paid in "bacon and corn."

In 1670, the people of Newtown, agreed to give 40 shillings a piece, towards erecting a meeting house, to be paid "half in corn and half in cattle."

In 1686, the town of Huntington contracted with a carpenter to make an addition to their meeting house, to be paid in produce at stipulated prices.

In 1680, the town of South Hampton agreed to give Joseph Taylor, their minister, the use of the parsonage, four acres in their ox pasture, one-fiftieth in the commonage, and one hundred acres woods. Also, a yearly salary of £100, payable in winter wheat at five shillings a bushel, summer wheat at four shillings a bushel, Indian corn at two shillings and six-pence a bushel, tallow at six-pence per pound, green hides at three-pence, dry hides at six-pence per pound, beef at forty shillings the barrel, pork at £3 10 the barrel, or three-pence the pound, whale bone at eight pence the pound, and oil at thirty shillings the barrel; to be collected by the constable and overseers, or by men to be appointed by them.

In 1682, the town of Hempstead agreed to give Jeremiah Hobart, their minister, the use of the parsonage, and three or four acres of land, the use of the common for his cattle, and to give him one hundred acres of land where he chose to take it up, and a yearly salary of £66, 14, payable in corn and cattle.

Debts were discharged—executions satisfied, and rates paid in produce. The rate at which produce was taken in payment of debts, was, the price which the merchants gave for the like articles at the time.

In 1654, the magistrates of East Hampton ordered that the town rates should be paid in wheat at four shillings and six-pence per bushel, and Indian corn at three shillings and six-pence.

In 1665, the town court of Jamaica, in an action of trespass, gave judgment in favor of the plaintiff for twelve bushels and an half of wheat for his damages.

In 1679, the town court of Huntington gave judgment that the defendant should pay the debt demanded in "good, merchantable pay, at the current price."

In 1680, the same court gave judgment for the debt, and the Constable sold a house and lot on execution for £10, 10, to be paid in "merchantable pay at the current price."

Executions issuing out of the court of sessions, were also levied in produce, but it was appraised by indifferent men, chosen by the parties or appointed by the sheriff, when it was delivered to the plaintiff in satisfaction of his judgment.

The prices of produce receivable for county rates, were generally fixed by the Governor and court of assize, but were sometimes submitted to the court of sessions, subject to the revision and approbation of the Governor.

In 1665, the Assessors of the several towns were ordered by law to estimate stock at the following rates :

A horse or mare, 4 years old and upward,	£12	0	0
Do. do. 3 and 4 - - - -	8	0	0
Do. do. 2 and 3 - - - -	4	0	0
Do. do. 1 and 2 - - - -	3	0	0
An ox or bull 4 years old and upward, -	6	0	0
A cow 4 years old and upward, - -	5	0	0
A steer or heifer between 3 and 4 - -	4	0	0
Do. do. 2 and 3 - - -	2	10	0
Do. do. 1 and 2 - - -	1	10	0
A goat one year old, - - - -	0	8	0
A sheep, do. - - - -	0	6	8
A swine, do. - - - -	1	0	0

In 1679, the prices fixed at which produce should be received for county rates were as follows :

Pork, - - - - -	£0	0	3	per lb.
Beef, - - - - -	0	0	2	do.
Winter wheat, - - - - -	0	4	0	per bushel
Summer do. - - - - -	0	3	6	do.
Rye, - - - - -	0	2	6	do.
Indian corn, - - - - -	0	2	3	do.
Oil, - - - - -	1	10	0	per barrel.

In 1687, the prices of produce receivable for taxes were as follows :

Pork,	-	-	-	-	£3	10	0	per barrel, or 3d per lb.
Beef,	-	-	-	-	1	10	0	do. 2d do.
Wheat,	-	-	-	-	0	5	0	per bushel.
Indian corn,	-	-	-	-	0	2	6	do.
Tallow,	-	-	-	-	0	0	6	per lb.
Dry hides,	-	-	-	-	0	0	4	do.
Green,	-	-	-	-	0	0	2	do.

Contract prices of various articles, from 1655, to 1687 :

Pork,	-	-	-	-	-	£0	0	3	per lb.
Beef,	-	-	-	-	-	0	0	2	do.
Wheat,	from	-	-	-	-	0	4	0	per bushel, to 5s.
Rye,	-	-	-	-	-	0	3	6	do.
Corn,	-	-	-	-	-	0	2	6	do.
Oats,	-	-	-	-	-	0	2	0	do.
Butter,	-	-	-	-	-	0	0	6	per lb.
Tallow,	-	-	-	-	-	0	0	6	do.
Hogs' fat,	-	-	-	-	-	0	0	6	do.
Board,	-	-	-	-	-	0	5	0	per week.
Victuals,	-	-	-	-	-	0	0	6	per meal.
Lodging,	-	-	-	-	-	0	0	2	per night.
Beer,	-	-	-	-	-	0	0	2	per mug.
Pasture,	-	-	-	-	-	0	1	0	for a day and night.
Labour,	-	-	-	-	-	0	2	6	per day.

The practice of paying in produce continued until about the year 1700 ; when trade had rendered money plenty, and introduced it into general circulation.

*Of the Character of the first Settlers in the several English towns on Long-Island.*

The English towns on the Island, both on the Dutch and English territories, were settled by companies of individuals, the most of whom had first landed in some part of New-England ; but had remained there only a short time, little longer in some instances than was necessary to select a proper place for a permanent residence, and to form themselves into associations adequate to the commencement of new settlements.

The first settlers of Southold, remained a short time at New Haven. Those of Southampton and Easthampton, were some time at Lynn. The people of Hempstead had made a short stay first at Wethersfield, and again at Stamford before they fixed themselves in those respective towns.

The first settlers of Easthampton came from Maidstone,

in Kent. The first settlers of Southampton and of Hempstead, were probably the most of them from Yorkshire ; and the first settlers of most of the other towns, seem to have been collections composed of individuals from almost every part of England.

These companies in most of the towns, consisted at first of only a few families.

The first settlement of Easthampton was commenced by nine families ; of Southampton, by fourteen ; of Huntington, by eleven ; and of Oysterbay, by ten ; but in all these cases, the company in advance was immediately followed by others, and the settlements increased by the constant accession of new comers.\*

The original settlers in most of the English towns, both in the Dutch and English territories, were principally English Independents or Presbyterians, and partook of the spirit and temper, which at the time of their emigration, characterized that class of men in England.

Many of the first settlers in the several towns on the Island, were well educated, and sensible men—they had sustained a good standing in society, and left reputable connections in England.

The early records and public documents of the several towns, evince that the leading men among them had a correct knowledge of the laws and constitution of England, and were well acquainted with public business.

They left England during the turbulent times, in the reign of Charles the First ; when both civil and religious liberty, were prostrated by the illegal and tyrannical extension of the royal prerogative, and by the intolerance of the established Church, supported the one by the star chamber, and the other by the high commissioned court, before the abolition of these engines of arbitrary power.†

\* In 1657, in South Hampton, there were 75 who bore arms in the Militia, and drew powder from the magazine, on an alarm created by the hostile acts of the Montauk Indians.

In 1659, in Hempstead, there were 62 heads of families who contracted with the herdsmeo to attend their cattle.

In 1684, in Huntington, there were 84 enrolled on the assessment list, the chief of whom, probably, were heads of families.

In 1680, in Oysterbay, there were 41 freeholders who shared in the second division of the lands in that town.

17th September, 1673, the number required to take the oath of allegiance to the newly established Dutch Government under Anthony Colve, was as follows :

Jamaica 68, Flushing 67, Brooklyn 51, Flatbush 75, Flatlands 45, Utrecht 41, Gravesend 51, Bushwick 35, Newtown 99, Hempstead 107.

† The Puritans being unable to adopt the Constitution of the Church of England, in 1584 established a government for their churches, by Pastors, Elders, and Deacons.

From 1569 to 1642, during the reign of Elizabeth, James, and part of Charles I, they were constantly harrassed by the Bishops for their non-conformity ; and submission to the edicts of Episcopal tyranny was enforced by the high commissioned Court.

This Court, with the Star Chamber, was abolished in 1642, and these persecutions were sus-



They fled from tyranny and oppression, and were ardently devoted to the cause of civil liberty, and zealous for the purity and simplicity of the Protestant religion—they were zealous of their rights and resolute in their defence.

They held that by the British Constitution, the people were entitled to a share in legislation, and that their property could not be taken from them without their consent. That every man had a right to adopt that mode of worship which he believed most agreeable to the scriptures, and that religion was essential to public order and social happiness. For the unmolested enjoyment of these blessings, they had forsaken the scenes of civilization, had broken asunder the ties which bound them to their native soil, had encountered the dangers of the ocean, and had submitted to the hazards and privations of a new and savage country, and they were anxious to incorporate these principles in their new establishments, and to make them the basis of their social and political fabrics.

*Of the Civil and Political condition of the several towns in the English Territory, before the conquest.*

The several towns in the English territory were not under the control of any colonial government, nor had they any political connection with each other. Being too remote from the mother country to derive any aid from thence, and without connections here, the whole powers of Government devolved on the inhabitants of each town. Self-preservation rendered it absolutely necessary, that they should assume the exercise of these powers, until a change in their condition should supercede the necessity of it.

Thus, each town at its first settlement was a pure democracy, the people of each town, exercised the sovereign power. All questions were determined by the voice of the major part of the people assembled in town meeting. In this manner they formed such laws and regulations as they judged necessary for the security, peace and prosperity of their infant settlements.

The people of Southampton, previous to their settlement,

pendent during the Commonwealth; but after the restoration of Charles II, in 1660, they were renewed by the act of uniformity, the conventicle act, and the corporation and test acts, and continued until the Revolution; soon after which, in 1691, the toleration act was passed, which secured to the dissenters a partial and *qualified* enjoyment of their religious rights, but still left them subject to many ecclesiastical oppressions.

These oppressions contributed to people the United States. Most of the first settlers on Long-Island left England during the prevalence of these oppressive measures, in the reign of Charles I. They sought an asylum principally for the enjoyment of religious freedom; and they and their posterity have ever since retained an abhorrence of tyranny in every shape, and have always been the devoted friends of civil and religious freedom.



entered into a social contract with each other, to be governed by such laws and orders as should be made by the vote of the major part of the inhabitants; and to support and maintain the authority of the magistrates, in executing such laws and orders as should be in force among them.

It is supposed that the people of South Old entered into a similar compact, previous to the settlement of that town.

In 1655, the people of Easthampton, did the same: and it is presumed that most, if not all the towns in the English territory, in the infancy of their respective settlements, more or less formally entered into similar covenants and combinations, or adopted something of the like nature, as the basis of their social structure.

In 1653, the town of Easthampton sent for a copy of the laws of Connecticut; and selected from them such as they judged applicable to their circumstances, and adopted them.

In 1659, Southampton did the same; and the uniformity observable in the laws of the several towns, render it probable that the other towns did the like, or made those laws the model for such as they made themselves.

The greater part of their laws, resolutions and orders were framed by themselves, in their respective town meetings—they comprised such provisions as were required by their peculiar situation and such as are necessary to the well being of every Society.

The first class of acts related to the division of their lands—the enclosure of common fields for cultivation and pasture—to regulations respecting fences, highways and watering places—respecting cattle, sheep and horses, that run at large, and in the common fields; and respecting the destruction of wild beasts.

The second class of acts made provision for the public defence—for the collection of taxes—for the education of youth—for the preservation of good morals—for the support of religion; and for the suppression and punishment of crimes and offences.

One of the first measures adopted in every town, was to require every man to provide himself with arms and ammunition; and to assemble at an appointed place, when warned, under a penalty for neglect in any of these respects.

In several of the towns, the first settlers erected a small fort or block house, for their security. These precautions were probably taken to guard against the Dutch, as well as the Indians, at least in the western towns.

The men capable of bearing arms in every town, were organized into companies, under proper officers; and were required to meet at stated times, for inspection and exercise.

In 1642, the Military Company of Southampton was required to meet six times a year for these purposes.

The public expenses were defrayed by a tax, the amount of which was fixed by a vote of the people, in a general town meeting; and the rates were made and gathered by persons chosen for that purpose.

The salaries of the first ministers in most of the towns, seem to have been raised as other taxes, by an assessment on all the inhabitants, according to the quantity of land they had taken up.

A school was established in Easthampton, in the infancy of the settlement; and the teacher was allowed a salary of £33 a year.

Among the records of Huntington for 1657, there is a draught of a contract with a school master for three years, at a salary of £25 for the first year, £35 for the second, and £40 for the third; and it is presumed that schools were established in all the towns at an early period of their settlement.

The more effectually to preserve the purity of the public morals, they excluded from their society such as they judged would be likely to injure them.

The lands were purchased and held by the first settlers, and they could dispose of them to whom they pleased. This power was an important engine in their hands, for the preservation of good morals; and it seems to have been efficiently employed for that purpose.

In the year 1651, the town of East Hampton ordered that a lot should not be laid out for a certain individual, and that he should not stay in the town.

In 1662, the people of Huntington, by a vote of the town meeting, appointed a committee consisting of their Minister and six of their most respectable inhabitants, to examine the characters of those who came to settle among them, with power to admit or to refuse admission to them, as they judged they would be likely to benefit or injure the society; with a proviso that they should not exclude any "that were honest, and well approved of by honest and judicious men;" and forbid any inhabitant to sell or let house or land, to any one but such as should be approved of by the said committee, under the penalty of £10, to be paid to the town.

In 1663, the same town forbid any inhabitant to entertain a certain obnoxious individual, longer than the space of a week, either gratuitously or for pay, under the penalty of 40 shillings, for the breach of the order "made for the peace of the town."

It seems to have been adopted as an indispensable rule, in all the English towns on the Island, that no person should be admitted to settle among them without the approbation of the inhabitants, or of a majority of them.

The first settlers in the several towns, also adopted every precaution in their power, to prevent their houses of entertainment from becoming injurious to the public morals.

In 1651, the town of East Hampton passed an act forbidding any persons to sell any liquor but such as were deputed by the town for that purpose, and also forbidding such persons to suffer youth and such as were under other men's management, to remain drinking at unseasonable hours, and that they should not let them have more than half a pint among four men.

In 1650, the town of Hempstead established a house of entertainment, and enjoined it upon the keeper "to keep such order that it might not be offensive to the laws of God or the place."

In 1660, the town of Huntington established a house of entertainment, and to ensure good order, made the continuance of the keeper to depend on the correctness with which he discharged his trust.

The first settlers of the several towns in Suffolk County, and the first settlers of Hempstead, made provision for the support of the Gospel among them, in the infancy of their settlements; and the first settlers of Jamaica and Newtown did the like in an early period of their settlements. The first settlers were careful in exacting punctual attendance on public worship, and a strict observance of the Sabbath, and in preventing every kind of personal injury.

In 1650 the town of Hempstead resolved that if any person neglected to attend public worship without a reasonable excuse he should pay five guilders for the first offence, ten for the second, and twenty for the third; and that if he afterwards repeated the offence, he should be liable either to an aggravation of the fine, to corporal punishment, or banishment. About the same period the town of East Hampton ordered that no Indian should travel up and down, or carry any burden in or through the town on the Sabbath

day ; and that whosoever should be found so doing, should be liable to corporal punishment.

The town of East Hampton ordained that whosoever should slander any one, should be liable to pay a fine of £5.

The same town ordained that whosoever should arise up a false witness against any man, to testify that which is wrong, there should be done unto him as he thought to have done unto his neighbor, whether it should be to taking away of life, limb, or goods.

The same town ordered that if any one should strike another he should pay a fine of ten shillings to the town ; and that if smiting he should wound, he should pay for the cure and the time the person was thereby hindered.

To secure the administration of justice, and to prevent and punish offences, a court was established in every town, in the English territory, called the town court ; it was composed generally of three Magistrates, a clerk and constable, who were chosen annually by the people in their respective town meetings.

The people of the respective towns invested their town court with power to hear and determine all causes, civil and criminal.

The proceedings of the courts in the several towns, were governed by the principles of the Common Law. The parties were entitled to a jury, if either of them required it. The jury consisted of seven men, and the verdict was decided by the voice of the majority.

In most of the towns, the decisions of the town court were conclusive ; but in South Hampton, an appeal lay from the decisions of the town court to the general town meeting, called the general court, which heard the appeal, and gave such judgment as was deemed just and right between the parties.

The officers of the town courts frequently made orders relative to matters which concerned the welfare of the town, which seem to have had the same force and effect as the resolutions of the town meeting, from which it is presumed that they were invested with power for this purpose, by the voice of the people.

The respective town courts were vigilant in repressing and punishing all kinds of vice and profanity.

In 1653, the town court of South Hampton ordered that if any person over fourteen years of age, should be convicted of wilful lying, by the testimony of two witnesses, he



should be fined five shillings, or set in the stocks five hours.

The same court at the same time ordered that if any person should be convicted of drunkenness, he should be fined ten shillings for the first offence, twenty for the second, and thirty for the third.

In 1682, the town court of Huntington ordered the estate of a certain person who was likely to spend it, to be seized, that it might be secured, preserved and improved for his livelihood and maintenance, and that the town might not be damnified.

The same town court ordered that a person who was convicted of bringing a bag of meal from Oysterbay to Huntington on the Sabbath, should pay a fine of ten shillings, or make such acknowledgment for the offence as the court would accept.

In 1702, the town court of South Old fined a person 6s. 7 for a breach of the Sabbath.

In 1711, the same court fined a person three shillings for profane swearing.

Two cases of witchcraft occurred on Long-Island.

In 1657, a Mrs. Garlicke was brought before the town court of East Hampton, on suspicion of witchcraft, and a number of witnesses were examined in support of the charge. The Magistrates, after hearing the testimony, concluded to send her to Connecticut for further trial, the result of which is not known.

In 1665, Ralph Hall and his wife were accused of witchcraft at Brookhaven, and the cause was tried before the court of assize at New-York, and terminated in their acquittal; an account of which is published in the Appendix to Yates' continuation of Smith's history of New-York.

Under the benign influence of the Common Law and of regulations made by themselves and enforced by Magistrates, annually chosen at their town meetings, the people of the several towns in the English territory seem to have enjoyed the usual benefits of good government, and to have prospered as well as those settlements that were under an organized government.

#### *Of their Union with Connecticut.*

The several English towns on Long Island, that were settled under the authority of the Earl of Stirling, and under the English claim to the Island, were exposed to interruption both by the Dutch and Indians.



In order to secure the power and influence of the New-England colonies to protect them against the perils of their condition, they very early sought a connection with those colonies.

The several towns joined Connecticut at different times—South Hampton, in 1644—East Hampton, in 1657—Brookhaven, in 1659—Huntington, in 1660, and Oysterbay probably in 1662—South Old joined New-Haven in 1648, and with that colony was united with Connecticut in 1662.

The towns of Hartford, Windsor and Wethersfield, in 1639, formed an union for their mutual benefit, and framed a constitution better calculated to secure liberty and good government, perhaps, than any that had ever before been formed. This compact constituted the government and original jurisdiction of Connecticut.\*

Connecticut was at first, and for some years, without the authority of a patent, and in fact, had no legal jurisdiction beyond the bounds of those three towns and such as joined them. The several towns on the Island were received under her jurisdiction on their voluntary offer, and at their own solicitation.

By the union they became members of the body politic of Connecticut, and were entitled to the benefits and liable to the duties of the other towns within her jurisdiction, and became, in common with them, entitled to the protection of the united colonies.

The several towns became entitled to send deputies to the general Court at Hartford: and it appears that the towns of South Hampton and East Hampton availed themselves of the privilege, and sent deputies to Hartford as South Old did to New-Haven.†

\* The supreme power was vested in a Governor, Deputy-Governor, and a Council, or assistants, to be annually chosen by all the freemen of the Colony, with deputies to be chosen half-yearly in each town by the freemen of the town. It was ordained that the General Court, or Assembly composed of these officers, should meet twice a year, and should have power to make laws and repeal them—to impose and collect taxes—to admit freemen to dispose of the public lands—to establish courts—appoint public officers, and for good cause to displace them, or punish them, and to do all other acts for the good government of the commonwealth, except that of electing the Governor, Council, and Assembly, which was to remain the exclusive province of the freemen.

† Deputies or Assistants to the General Court from Long-Island:

	Southampton,	Easthampton,
1655, - - -	Thomas Topping, - - - - -	0
1656, - - -	do. - - - - -	0
1657, - - -	do. - - - - -	0
1658, - - -	Alexander Knowles, - - - - -	Mr. Mulford,
1659, - - -	Thomas Topping, - - - - -	Robert Bond,
1660, - - -	do. - - - - -	do.
1661, - - -	do. - - - - -	do.
1662, - - -	do. - - - - -	Mr. Baker,
1663, - - -	Mr. Howell, - - - - -	do.

Deputies from South Old to New-Haven:  
1662, Barnabas Horton, John Parrier.

The want of legal authority prevented the exercise of any authoritative jurisdiction by Connecticut over the towns on Long-Island before she received the charter granted by Charles II. in 1662.

It does not appear that she attempted to establish counties, organize courts, or levy taxes there before that period.

The union seems to have resembled an alliance for mutual consultation and defence, rather than a consolidated government.

The charter of Connecticut granted by Charles II. was received in 1662. It was very similar in its provision to the constitution adopted in 1639, and was little more than a development of them.

The liberal provisions of the new charter made the several towns on Long-Island very desirous to perpetuate their connection with that colony. Long-Island was not mentioned in the charter, but the names of some of the magistrates of one or more of the towns were inserted among those who were to administer it.

A clause in the new charter annexing the adjacent Islands to that colony, also furnished her with a pretext to claim Long-Island; and it was doubtless with the consent, if not at the instance, of the several towns on the Island that had joined her jurisdiction, that she set up a construction of her charter, which, if it could have been sustained, would have embraced all the English towns on the Island, and the whole Island after the conquest.

After the reception of the royal charter, the general court of Connecticut claimed the legal jurisdiction over the English towns on Long-Island which had put themselves under her protection, and had become members of her association.

These towns were permitted to send deputies to the general court, and were liable to the same duties as the other towns. Each town was entitled to send one deputy to the general assembly, but were wholly left at liberty to send one or not as they chose.

The general court appointed such public officers in the several towns as were not permitted by the charter to be chosen by the people.

April 6th 1663, the town of Huntington chose three men whose names were to be sent to Hartford for the general court to elect two out of the number as magistrates for the town.

The general court ordered a contribution to be levied on

the towns on the Island, as well as on those on the main, towards the payment of the expence of the new charter, and it would seem that they were subject to taxes in the same manner as other towns within her jurisdiction.

In 1664, the town of South Hampton appointed men to make the rate "both in respect to Hartford and this town."

May 12th, 1664, the general court proceeded to organize the courts on the Island on the plan of those of Connecticut.

For this purpose they appointed a governor and three others to go to the Island to settle the English plantation there under the government of Connecticut, to establish quarter courts and other courts, for the administration of justice; provided their judgments should not extend to life, limb, or banishment—and directed capital cases to be tried at Fairfield or Hartford.

These Commissioners came upon the Island in June 1664, organized courts,\* established rules for the collection of rates and other matters; but their arrangements were all frustrated before they could be carried into effect, by the conquest of the Dutch territories, and the annexation of Long Island to the government of the Duke of York.

Long-Island was not comprised in the grant of any colony. It had been granted by order of Charles I. to William Earl of Stirling, but had been relinquished to the crown, or to the Duke of York by his heirs, and left free to be made the subject of a new grant, or to be included in the patent to him.

March 12th, 1664, Charles II. by letters patent, granted the country occupied by the Dutch, together with Long-Island, to his brother James, the Duke of York.

A few months after the date of his patent, the Duke of York procured a squadron with some land forces, to be fitted out for the reduction of the territories comprised within his grant, under the command of Colonel Richard Nicolls, whom he appointed to assume the government of the country as deputy Governor under him, and with whom the King associated Colonel George Cartwright, Sir Robert Carr, and Samuel Maverick, Esq., as Commissioners, with power to fix the boundaries between the several colonies, to adjust all differences between them, and to settle the country in peace.

\* The Committee of the General Assembly established a court for the three towns of East-Hampton, South-Hampton, and South Old, to be holden four times a year, twice at South-Hampton, and once in each of the other towns, and appointed three Commissioners, one in each town, to hold the said court.

The Commissioners landed at Boston on their way to New-York, and requested that that colony would raise two hundred men and send them on to assist such troops as they had brought along with them in reducing the Dutch.

The request of the Commissioners was readily assented to, but subsequent events rendered the aid unnecessary before it could be furnished.

The Commissioners landed at Gravesend, on the west end of Long-Island, about the middle of August, 1664. They summoned the English on the Island to attend them at that place, and Governor Wintthrop, of Connecticut, met them there.

Colonel Nicolls exhibited to the Governor, and such as were there assembled, the letters patent to the Duke of York, with his own commission.

Colonel Nicolls demanded a surrender of the country, promising life, liberty and property to the inhabitants on their submission. Governor Wintthrop wrote to the Dutch Governor, recommending a surrender on the terms offered, and after a few days had been spent in messages and letters between Colonel Nicolls and the Dutch Governor, the place was surrendered to the Commissioners the 27th August, old style.

Governor Wintthrop, after seeing the letters patent to the Duke of York, informed the English on Long-Island, that Connecticut had no longer any claim to the Island; that what they had done was for the welfare, peace and quiet settlement of his Majesty's subjects, as they were the nearest organized government to them under his Majesty; but now his Majesty's pleasure was fully signified by his letters patent, their jurisdiction ceased and became null.

It seems, however, that the colony of Connecticut was still desirous of retaining Long-Island under her jurisdiction, and the several towns on the Island which had been connected with that colony, were as anxious that the connection should be continued.

November 30, 1664, the Commissioners met to settle the boundary between Connecticut and the Duke of York, and after hearing the allegations of the deputies who attended from Long-Island, as well as those who attended from Connecticut in favour of connecting Long-Island with that colony, they determined that the south boundary of Connecticut was the Sound, and that Long-Island was to be under the government of his Royal Highness the Duke of York.



OF THE ECCLESIASTICAL STATE OF THE SEVERAL TOWNS ON  
THE ISLAND.

*Of the Dutch Towns.*

The people of the Dutch towns professed the doctrines inculcated by the Synod, held at Dort, in Holland, in 1618, and were under the ecclesiastical government of the classis of Amsterdam, until 1772, when the Dutch Church of this country established an independent classis and synods on the model of the Church in Holland.

Each town had its own consistory, but the whole constituted but one church. Their ministers were colleagues, preached in turn in all the churches, and were supported by a common contribution.

The first house for public worship that was erected by the Dutch, was built in New-Amsterdam, 1642. no

December 17, 1654, the Governor, who seems to have exercised supreme power in ecclesiastical, as well as civil and military affairs, ordered a house for public worship to be erected at Flatbush, 60 feet in length, 38 in breadth, and 14 feet in height below the beams.

February 9, 1655, the Governor ordered the people of Brooklyn and Amersfort, to assist the people of Midwout, or Flatbush, in cutting timber to build the house.

In September, 1660, those who had the charge of the building, stated that it had cost 4637 guilders, of which sum 3437 had been collected in New Amsterdam, Fort Orange, and on Long-Island. The Governor added 400 more, and there remained 800 to be raised to discharge the debt.

The next house for public worship was commenced at Flatlands in 1663, and one at Brooklyn in 1666.

October 13, 1656, the Rev. Joannes Theodorus Polhemus, was by the Dutch Governor permitted to preach at Midwout and Amersfort.

In March, 1656, to accomodate the four villages, Gravesend, Amersfort, Midwout, and Brooklyn, the Dutch Governor ordered Mr. Polhemus to preach every Sunday morning at Midwout, and in the afternoon alternately, at Amersfort and Brooklyn.

In 1660, the Rev. Henricus Selwyn was installed at Brooklyn, by order of the Dutch Governor, at a salary of 600 guilders a year, one half to be paid by Brooklyn, and the other half by Fatherland or Holland. Mr. Selwyn resided in New Amsterdam, and in 1662, the people of Brook-



lyn petitioned the Governor, that he should be required to reside among them. To lighten their burdens, the Governor agreed to pay 250 guilders of his salary, on condition that he should preach at Bowery every Sunday evening.

It is said that Mr. Selwyn went to Holland, in 1664: if that was the case, he must have returned to New-York some time afterwards, as he was a minister there from 1682 to 1700.

The regular record of baptisms in the Dutch towns, commenced in 1660.

From a manuscript of the Rev. Peter Low, deceased, it appears that the succeeding ministers in the Dutch churches on Long Island settled before 1800, were as follows:

	<i>Settled.</i>	<i>Died or removed.</i>
Joannes Megapolensis,		1668
Casperus Van Zuren,		1677
Mr. ——— Clark,		1695
William Lupardus,		1700
Bernard Freeman,	1702	1741
Vicentius Antonides,	1715	1744
Joannes Arondius		1742
Anthony Cortenius,	1730	1756
Ulpianus Van Sinderen,	1747	1796
John Casper Rubel,	1760	1797
Martinius Schoonmaker,	1785	1824
Peter Lowe,	1787	died 1818

Since 1800, the ministers who have settled in the Dutch churches have been confined to the particular congregation in which they were settled. The ministers settled since that time, are as follows:

	<i>Settled.</i>	<i>Died.</i>	<i>Removed.</i>
Brooklyn, Selah S. Woodhull,	1805		1825
Utrecht, John Beattie,	1809		
Bushwick, John Bassett,	1811	1824	
Flatbush, Walter Montieth,	1819		1820
do., Thomas M. Strong,	1822		

A Dutch church was erected in Jamaica in 1715, in Newtown shortly after, in North Hempstead and Oysterbay, 1732, or thereabouts. These churches seem to have been supplied by the ministers of Kings county till 1750. From that period they were united under their own ministers, who preached in common among them until 1802, since which time Jamaica and Newtown have formed one connexion.

and North Hempstead and Oysterbay another. These ministers were :

Thomas Romeyn,	1750	} <i>For the four churches.</i>
Bollan,	1770	
Freleigh,	1774	
Van Ness,	1784	
Zacharia Cooper,	1784	
Joel Schoonmaker,	1802	<i>Jamaica and Newtown.</i>
Mr. Cooper, from 1802, to 1812		<i>N. Hempstead &amp; Oysterbay.</i>
David Bogert,	1812	<i>do.</i>

Most of the early Dutch ministers that were settled on the Island, were born and educated in Holland, and some of them were distinguished for their talents and learning.

Mr. Selwyn, who was the first minister of Brooklyn, and who was afterwards settled in New-York, prefixed a latin poem to Cotton Mather's "*Magnalia Christi Americana*," bearing date, October 16, 1697, and signed Henericus Selwyn, "*Ecclesiæ Eboracensis Minister Belgicus.*"

Mr. Freeman left a volume of sermons which are in the hands of his descendants, but as they are in the Dutch language their merit is not generally known.

If there are any productions of the other Dutch ministers on Long-Island, they are probably in the Dutch language, and no longer read.

#### *Of the English Towns.*

The original settlers of the several towns in Suffolk county, and the greater number of the first settlers of the English towns in the Dutch territory, were united in their religious opinions. They were uniform in their adherence to the doctrines contained in the confession of faith, agreed on by the assembly of divines, who met at Westminster, in 1642. They also accorded with each other on the subject of church government. The constitution of the churches in the several towns was originally congregational, and so continued until 1747, when the greater number were prevailed on to exchange the congregational form for that of the Presbyterian, which they were taught to believe to be better adapted to support purity of doctrine, and an efficient discipline.\*

In most of the towns in Suffolk county and in Hempstead,

\* The experience of Europe since the Reformation, proves that that constitution of Church government which embraces different churches professing the same doctrines, under the same superintending jurisdiction, has contributed much more to preserve purity and unity of doctrine, than that which left every congregation to adopt its own creed, and to prescribe its own discipline.

a minister accompanied the first settlers, and a church was organized among them, either before or soon after the commencement of their respective settlements.

In most, if not in every town, a dwelling house was erected and land set apart as a parsonage for the use of the ministry. The minister of each town was allowed the use of the parsonage, with the addition of a salary payable in produce or money. It is probable that the amount of the salary was regulated by the value of the parsonage. In 1659 the salary of the minister of East Hampton was £60 a year. In 1663 the salary of the minister of Jamaica was £60. In 1680, that of the minister of South Hampton was £100, and in 1682, that of the minister of Hempstead was £66 14.

A house for public worship was erected in South Hampton, and probably in South Old, previous to the year 1645, and these were the first houses that were erected for public worship on the Island.

A house for public worship was erected in Hempstead probably before 1650, in East Hampton in 1651, in Jamaica in 1662, and in Huntington in 1665.

The first houses that were erected for public worship in the several towns were not large. The difficulty of procuring materials limited them in the construction of the buildings to the accommodation of the respective societies, at the time they were erected.

The house erected in Jamaica in 1662, was 36 feet in length, 26 in breadth, and 17 feet high. The second house erected in Hempstead in 1677, was 40 feet in length, 26 in breadth, and 12 feet high. The one erected in Brookhaven in 1671, was 28 feet square.

At this early period, the houses of public worship were without the accommodation of bells, and in several of the towns, if not in all, the people employed a person to beat a drum to apprise them of the time of public worship.

In 1662, the town of Jamaica agreed to give a person 30s. a year for beating a drum on the Sabbath day, and similar contracts were made in other towns, and the practice probably continued till bells were procured.

*The following is as correct a list of the first Congregational or Presbyterian Ministers, and their successors in the several English towns on Long-Island, as could be obtained.*

Names.	Where educated.	When graduated.	Settled.	Died.	Removed.	Remarks.
<b>SOUTH OLD.</b>						
John Youngs,	England,	1640	1672			aged 74
Joshua Hobart,	Harvard,	1650 1674	1717			aged 89
Benjamin Woolsey,	Yale,	1709 1720		1736		or thereabouts.
James Davenport,	do.	1732 1738		1746		
William Throop,	do.	1743 1748	1756			aged 36
John Storrs,	do.	1756 1763		1787		
Joseph Hazard,		1797		1806		
Jonathan Hunting.	do.	1804 1807				
<b>SOUTH HAMPTON.</b>						
Abraham Pierson,	England,	1640		1644		removed to Branford, and in 1667
Robert Fordham,	England,	1648	1674			[to Newark,
Joseph Taylor,	Harvard,	1669 1680	1682			aged 31.
Joseph Whiting,	do.	1661 1682	1723			aged 82.
Sylvanus White,	do.	1722 1727	1782			aged 79.
Joshua Williams,	Yale,	1780 1784		1790		
Harman Daggett,	Rhode Island,	1788 1791		1795		
David Bogert,	Columbia,	1790 1796		1812		
John M. Babbitt,		1813		1818		
Peter H. Shaw,		1820				
<b>EAST HAMPTON.</b>						
Thomas James,	England,	1650	1666			
Nathaniel Hunting,	Harvard,	1693 1699	1753			in his 78th year.
Samuel Buel,	Yale,	1741 1746	1798			aged 82
Lyman Beecher,	do.	1797 1799		1810		
Ebenezer Phillips,		1811				
<b>HUNTINGTON.</b>						
William Leveridge,	England,	1658		1670		removed to Newtown,
Eliphalet Jones,		1677 1731				or thereabouts, aged 90
Ebenezer Prime,	Yale,	1718 1723	1779			aged 79.
John Close,	Nassau,	1763 1766		1773		a colleague of Mr. Prime.
Nathan Woodhull,	Yale,	1775 1785		1789		removed to Newtown.
William Schenck,	Nassau,	1767 1794		1817		removed to Ohio.
Samuel Robinson,		1817		1823		
Nehemiah Brown,	Yale,	1817 1824				
<b>BROOKHAVEN.</b>						
Nathaniel Brewster,	Harvard,	1642 1665	1690			
George Phillips,	Harvard,	1686 1697	1739			
David Youngs,	Yale,	1741 1745	1752			or thereabouts.
Benjamin Talmadge,	do.	1747 1754	1786			
Noah Whetmore,	do.	1757 1786	1798			
Zachariah Greene,		1797				
<b>SMITHTOWN.</b>						
Abner Reeve,	Yale,	1731				
Naphtali Dagget,	do.	1748 1751		1756		Afterwards President of Yale Col-
Thomas Lewis,*	do.	1741 1763		1769		lege, died 1780.
Joshua Hart,	Nassau,	1770 1773		1792		removed to Fresh Pond.
Luther Gleason,		1797		1806		
Heory Fuller,	Middlebury,	1816		1821		
Richard Nicoll,		1823				
<b>HAMPSTEAD.</b>						
Richard Denton,	England,	1644	1663			
Jeremiah Hobart,	Harvard,	1650 1682		1696		or thereabouts; he settled at Had-
Joshua Hart,	Nassau,	1770 1772		1773		dam in 1700 and died in 1717,
Samuel Robinson,†		1812		1817		[aged 87.
Charles Webster,	Union,	1813 1818				
<b>NEWTOWN.</b>						
William Leveridge,	England,	1670	1690			
John Morse,		1697				
Samuel Pomeroy,	Nassau,	1705 1709	1744			
Simon Horton,	do.	1731 1746	1786			
— Bay,		1787		1789		
Nathan Woodhull,	Yale,	1775 1790	1810			

Names.	Where educated.	When graduated.	Settled.	Died.	Removed.	Remarks.
William Boardman,	Nassau,	1815	1811	1818		
John Goldsmith,	JAMAICA.		1819			
Zachariah Walker,	England,	1663			1668	removed to Stratford, then to [Woodbury.
John Prudden,	Harvard,	1665	1670		1693	removed to Newark.
George Phillips,			1694		1697	
John Hubbard,		1695	1698		1702	
George Magnus,			1712		1720	
Robert Cross,	Ireland,		1725		1730	removed to Philadelphia.
Mr. Heathcote,		1730	1734			
Walter Wilmot,	Yale,	1735	1738	1744		
David Bostwick,			1745		1756	*removed to New York.
Elihu Spencer,	do.	1758	1748		1760	removed to Trenton.
Benoni Bradner,	Nassau,	1755	1760		1762	
William Mills,	do.	1756	1762	1773		
Mathias Burnet,	do.	1769	1775		1784	removed to Norwalk.
— Glassbrook,	England,		1785		1788	
George Fatoute,	Nassau,	1776	1780	1815		
Henry R. Weed,	Union,	1812	1816		1822	removed to Albany.
Seymour P. Funk,			1823		1825	
BRIDGE HAMPTON.						
Ebenezer White,	Harvard,	1692	1695		1748	resigned; died 1756, aged 84.
James Brown,	Yale,	1747	1748		1775	
Aaron Woolworth,	do.	1784	1787	1821		in the 58th year of his age.
Amzi Francis,*	Middlebury,	1816	1823			

*A brief account of the first ministers, and of some of their immediate successors in the several English towns on Long Island, as far as their history could be ascertained.*

The Rev. John Youngs was the first minister of South Old. He had been a minister at Hingham, in Norfolk in England, before he emigrated to this country.

He came to New-Haven with part of his church, in 1640. and there re-organized his church and with them and such as chose to accompany them, in October passed over to Long-Island, and commenced a settlement on a tract of land which had been purchased of the natives under the authority of New-Haven.

They called the town Southold. They adopted the laws and became a branch of the jurisdiction of New-Haven.

William Wells, Barnabas Horton, Thomas Mapes, John Tuthill, and Mathias Corwin, were the leading men who formed the first settlement at South Old, and their posterity in that and the adjoining towns are numerous and respectable.

This town found it difficult to enforce the rule of the jurisdiction, which excluded all but church members from the privilege of freemen, and their departure from it created

\* The time of settlement and removal of the above ministers is generally taken from records, and in cases where they could not be procured, or did not furnish the information, resort has been had to the best sources of information that could be afforded, to supply the defect; and in a few instances the time is conjectured from circumstances.



some difficulty between that town and New-Haven, which was removed by the submission of both towns to the jurisdiction of Connecticut in 1665.

Mr. Youngs continued the minister of South Old till his death. He died in 1672, aged 74.

Mr. Youngs had several sons and daughters, to whom he left considerable property, a number of whose posterity still reside in South Old.

Several of Mr. Youngs' descendants have occupied public stations, and have been distinguished for public usefulness.

Colonel John Youngs, his eldest son, was a leading man in the public affairs of the town during his life time.

He was generally appointed the delegate to consult with the delegates of Southampton and Easthampton respecting the difficulties to which those three towns were exposed, both before and after the conquest of the Dutch territories by the English.

It is supposed that he was appointed one of the judges of the court which was established by the authority of Connecticut for those towns, immediately after that colony had received the charter of 1662.

In 1673, when the three towns were again taken under the jurisdiction of that colony, he was appointed one of the judges of the court which was then established for the administration of justice in those towns.

In 1681 he was high sheriff of Yorkshire, then composed of all Long-Island, and by request of the court of assize, the highest judicial tribunal in the colony, drew the petition for the privilege of having an assembly, which they sent to the Duke of York, and which was granted in 1683. He was made a member of the council of the colony in 1683, which station he seems to have retained as long as he could attend. He was also colonel of the militia of Suffolk county till 1693, when in consequence of his age the office was given to Colonel William Smith. He died in 1698, aged 75.

Benjamin Youngs, another son of Mr. Youngs, and Joshua Youngs, who is supposed to have been his grandson, were successively judges of the court of common pleas of Suffolk county, a series of years before the American Revolution, and Thomas Youngs, supposed to be another of the descendants of the Rev. John Youngs, was a judge of the same court for some time since the revolution. The Rev. David Youngs, supposed to be another of his descendants, graduated

at Yale College in 1741, became a minister, settled at Brookhaven in 1745, and continued there till his death in 1752.

Experience Youngs, the daughter of Benjamin Youngs, and grand daughter of the Rev. John Youngs, was the second wife of the Rev. Ebenezer Prime, the minister of Huntington from 1719 to 1779, and was grandmother of the Rev. Nathaniel Scudder Prime, who is at present the principal of the academy at Cambridge, in Washington county, in the State of New-York.

The Rev. Ezra Youngs, as is supposed, another of Mr. Youngs' descendants, has recently entered into the ministry, and preaches on Shelter Island.

The Rev. Joshua Hobart succeeded Mr. Youngs in 1674. He was a son of the Rev. Peter Hobart, who was educated at Cambridge, and preached at Haverhill and other places in England till 1635, when he with his children, came over to Massachusetts, and settled the town of Hingham, where he gathered a church, and continued a "faithful pastor and an able preacher," until his death in 1679. He had four sons, who became preachers.

Joshua was born in 1628, graduated at Harvard College in 1650. He settled at South Old in 1674, and continued there during his life time. He died in 1717, aged 89.

The church and congregation of South Old, after the death of Mr. Youngs, sent a messenger to Boston to seek "an honest and goodly minister," and in procuring Mr. Hobart, their wishes seem to have been realized, and they had the happiness to enjoy his labors during a long life.

Some of the posterity of Mr. Hobart, in the female line, recently resided in the town of South Old, and were respectable, but it is not known that he has any descendants now living.

The Rev. Abraham Pierson was the first minister of South Hampton. He had been a minister in Yorkshire, in England, and came over to Boston in 1639, and joined the church there.

Some of the English emigrants who had made a stand at Lynn, in Massachusetts, having agreed to form a settlement on Long-Island, on a tract of land which they had purchased of the natives, with the consent of James Farret, agent of the Earl of Stirling, they agreed with Mr. Pierson to accompany them as their minister. He organized a church among them, and they entered into a civil combination or covenant for the support of order and good government, before they

removed to the island. In December, 1640, they removed to the island and commenced the settlement of the town of South Hampton.

The Indian deed was executed to John Gosmer, Edward Howell, Edmund Farrington, George Wells, Edmund Needham, Thomas Sayre, Job Sayre, Edmund Halsey, Thomas Halsey, Henry Walton, Daniel Howe, John Cooper, Allen Bread, and William Harcher, and these, or most of them, are supposed to have commenced the first settlement of South Hampton, and their posterity, form no inconsiderable proportion of the present inhabitants of that town.

Shortly after the settlement of the town, they found it necessary for their security to form a connection with some one of the New-England colonies, and it seems they were divided in opinion relative to the one they should join.

New-Haven restricted all public offices as well as the right of suffrage to members of the church, while in Connecticut they were common to all the inhabitants within her jurisdiction; and it seems that Mr. Pierson, with a part of the church, wished to join New-Haven. The majority, however, preferred an union with Connecticut, and in 1644 joined that colony. In consequence of which it is supposed that Mr. Pierson and a portion of the people removed to Branford, where they commenced a new settlement, and put themselves under the jurisdiction of New-Haven.

After his settlement at Branford, Mr. Pierson was employed by the commissioners of the society for propagating the gospel in New-England, which was established in 1649 to instruct the Indians in those parts.

From the accounts of the commissioners in Hazard's collections, it appears that Mr. Pierson was employed in the service more or less of his time from 1653 to 1667.

In 1657, with the assistance of Thomas Stauton, an Indian interpreter, he translated into the language of the Indians, a catechism which he had composed for their use.

In 1659 he attended a meeting at Roxbury, in Massachusetts, for the purpose of witnessing the success of Mr. Elliot's labors among the Indians, and assisted in examining the Indian converts in their own language.

In 1665, New-Haven relinquished her independence, and became a member of the jurisdiction of Connecticut, under the charter granted by the king in 1662. It seems that Mr. Pierson and many others were opposed to this measure, and probably for the same reason that he left South Hampton he

determined with such as were of the same opinion, to leave that part of the country.

In May, 1666, Robert Treat, of Milford, and Samuel Swain of Branford, on behalf of themselves and a number of the people of Milford, Branford, New-Haven, and Guilford, made a purchase of the native proprietors of a tract of land on the Passaic river, in New-Jersey, in order to form a new settlement there.

It is supposed that some part of the settlers removed to the new settlement immediately after the purchase.

October 30th, 1666, the settlers adopted the law of New-Haven, which inhibited any person from becoming a freeman who was not a member of some congregational church.

The most of Mr. Pierson's church and congregation removed from Branford, and the settlers from the other towns united with them, under his ministry. They called the town New Ark, as is supposed after the town where Mr. Pierson was ordained in England.

From the fact of Mr. Pierson's receiving an allowance from the commissioners at their meeting, September 13th, 1667, for his services during the year preceding, it is supposed that he did not remove to Newark, until after that meeting in the fall of that year.

September 10th, 1668, the people of Newark, at a town meeting, voted to allow Mr. Pierson the expenses of his removal and digging his well, and also £80 for his services from the first of October, 1667, to the first of October, 1668, and stipulated to allow him a salary of £80 a year, payable half-yearly, in produce at the current price, from the first of October, 1668; and also to give him a pound of butter for every milch cow in the town, and also voted that he should be exempted from taxes, while he continued their minister.

It appears that Mr. Pierson was at this time advanced in years, and stood in need of an assistant.

July 28th, 1669, the town employed his son, Abraham Pierson, jun., who graduated at Harvard in 1668, to assist his father in the ministry. March 4th, 1672, he was regularly settled as a colleague with him.

It is supposed that Mr. Pierson gradually declined, so as not to be capable of much service after this period, and that he died in 1680 or '81, at an advanced age.

He is represented by Cotton Mather, as "an able and fervent preacher, and as a pious and prudent man," and the Rev. Alexander McWorter, one of his successors, in a cen-



tury sermon, preached January 1st, 1801, represents him to have been "a man of learning and piety, of natural abilities above the common level, and eminent for his wisdom, prudence and discretion."

His son remained at Newark until the summer of 1692, when he removed to Connecticut, and in 1694, settled at Killingsworth.

In 1701, he was chosen rector or president of the new college, which station he occupied till his death in 1708.

The Rev. John Pierson, a son of the President, settled at Woodbridge, New-Jersey, and was the ancestor of a number of families of that name in that part of the country.

The Rev. Ashbel Green of Philadelphia, late president of the college at Princeton, is said to be a grandson of Mr. Pierson, of Woodbridge.

It is supposed that the original ancestor left other posterity, whose descendants reside in New-Jersey, New-York and Connecticut, who are generally respectable.

The Rev. Robert Fordham succeeded Mr. Pierson in the ministry at South Hampton. He visited the town in 1648, and accepted an invitation to become their minister, but his salary did not commence, nor is it probable that he began his stated labors there until the 1st of April, 1649.

Mr. Fordham came from England; and it is related by Johnson, in his "wonder-working providence," that he first went to the west part of the Island, and it seems he accompanied Mr. Denton to Hempstead. His name is the first inserted in the patent granted by the Dutch Governor, December 16th, 1644, for that town. He was a resident and proprietor there, when he received the invitation of the people of South Hampton to become their minister. Mr. Fordham continued the minister of South Hampton till his death in 1674.

From the inventory of his property on record, it appears, that he possessed a large estate for that period, amounting to £2,000 and upwards, exclusive of his debts; and the value of his library, which was appraised at £53 7s. 6d., indicates that he was a man of learning as well as piety. The Rev. Josiah Fordham, supposed to have been a grandson of Mr. Fordham, preached a short time at Brookhaven after the decease of Mr. Brewster. His posterity still reside in South Hampton, and are respectable.

The Rev. Joseph Taylor succeeded Mr. Fordham, in March 1680, and died in April 1682. The invitation to him



with a single exception, was unanimous, which is a decisive proof that he must have been in great esteem with the people of that town. He came there from New-Haven ; but little is known of his history.

The Rev. Joseph Whiting was invited to South Hampton, in June 1682, and probably accepted the invitation and settled there a short time afterwards. Mr. Whiting was the youngest son of the Rev. Samuel Whiting, who was a distinguished preacher in Norfolk in England, came over to Boston in 1636, and settled at Lynn, where he continued till his death in 1679. He had three sons who were ministers. Mr. Joseph Whiting the youngest, graduated at Harvard in 1661. He studied theology with his father, and for many years assisted him in the ministry. Mr. Whiting continued the minister of Southampton till his death, in April, 1723, in the 82d year of his age.

Mr. Whiting was a close student, and devoted himself wholly to the duties of his sacred function. Cotton Mather, in his *Magnalia*, written in 1697, in his account of the family, says, "Joseph is at this day a worthy and painful minister of the gospel at South Hampton, on Long-Island."

There is a tradition among some of the elderly people of Southampton, that he so abstracted himself from the care of all temporal concerns, that he was ignorant of the number or nature of his own stock. Mr. Whiting left a son, the Rev. John Whiting, who graduated at Harvard in 1700, settled at Concord in 1712, and died in 1752, aged 71. His posterity reside in Concord. It is not known that Mr. Whiting has any posterity on Long-Island.

The Rev. Richard Denton was the first minister of Hempstead. He had been a minister in Halifax, in England. He came over to Warrentown between 1630 and '35. In 1635, he, with some who had joined the church there, under the charge of the Rev. George Phillips, and others, emigrated to Connecticut and commenced the settlement of Wethersfield. Mr. Denton, with some part of the people of Wethersfield, in 1641, removed to Stamford, and in 1644, he, with part of his church and congregation, removed to Hempstead on Long-Island, and settled on a tract of land which they had purchased of the Indians, and for which they received a patent from the Dutch, who exercised jurisdiction over that part of the Island. Matthias Mitchil, Thomas Rayner, Andrew Ward, Robert Coe, and Richard Gildersleve, were some of the leading men who accompanied Mr. Denton. Mr.

Denton continued the minister of Hempstead till his death, in 1663. He is represented by Cotton Mather as "an able preacher and an excellent man." He states that Mr. Denton left a manuscript system of divinity, entitled "*Soliloquia Sacra*," which was well spoken of by those who had seen it. Mr. Denton's posterity are numerous and respectable.

The Rev. Jeremiah Hobart settled at Hempstead in 1682.\* He was the son of the Rev. Peter Hobart, of Hingham, Massachusetts, and brother of Mr. Joshua Hobart, of South Old. He was born in England in 1630, and came over a child in 1635. He graduated at Harvard in 1650. He first preached at Topsfield in Massachusetts. He removed to Hempstead in 1682, where he continued till 1696, or thereabouts, when he removed to Haddam, in Connecticut, where he was installed in 1700, and preached till his death. He went to public worship in the forenoon, and died in his chair between meetings, in 1717, aged 87 years. He was the grandfather of the celebrated missionary, the Rev. David Brainard.

The Rev. Thomas James was the first minister of East Hampton. His ancestry is not known. It is conjectured, however, that he was a son of the Rev. Thomas James, who preached at Charlestown, in Massachusetts, in 1633, who went to Virginia as a missionary in 1642, and who, as is supposed, afterwards returned to England. It is the tradition that he came from England before he had finished his studies, and that he completed his education with some of the ministers who at that time adorned the churches of New-England. East Hampton was purchased of the native proprietors in 1648, and a settlement was shortly after formed there. John Hand, John Stretton, Thomas Talmage, jun., Robert Bond, Robert Rose, Thomas Thompson, Joshua Barnes, John Mulford and Daniel Howe, commenced the first settlement at East Hampton. It is not known when Mr. James first came there. In 1651, it appears from the town records that the inhabitants of that town agreed to give him £50 a year, for his labors in the ministry among them. It is not probable that he had been long there, perhaps not longer than was necessary to form an acquaintance with each other. It seems probable that the church was not

\* It is probable that the people of Hempstead employed a minister after the death of Mr. Denton, before the settlement of Mr. Hobart, but no records have been found that throw any light on the subject.

regularly organized, nor was Mr. James settled in East Hampton until 1650 or 1651.

In 1655, the inhabitants entered into a civil combination or social contract for the support of good government among themselves.

Mr. James seems to have been the first person employed to instruct the Indians on the Island.

In the accounts of the society for propagating the gospel in New-England, for 1661, there is an allowance of £10 to Mr. James of East Hampton, for preparing himself for that difficult employment; and in the accounts for the succeeding three years, there is an allowance of £20 a year for each of those years to Mr. James for his salary for instructing "the Indians at Long-Island."

Mr. Beecher, in his sermon of 1806, states "that Mr. James was unquestionably a man of strong natural powers, had a good education, understood public business, and was repeatedly employed by the town as a trustee, and to act for them with their committees on difficult emergencies." It may be added that the records of the town furnish ample evidence of uncommon firmness and decision of character.

Mr. James seems to have been very zealous for the preservation of civil liberty, and the protestant religion, which he saw endangered by the arbitrary measures and bigoted principles of James II. and his catholic governors, and probably freely and boldly expressed his apprehensions in the pulpit. In the colony records, in the minutes of the council for November 18th, 1686, it is stated that on the reception of two depositions charging the Rev. Thomas James of East Hampton, with having preached a certain seditious sermon on the 17th of October preceding, an order was passed by Governor Dongan and the council, for a warrant to be issued to a messenger to have Mr. James before the council that day fortnight to answer the premises. The result cannot be ascertained from the records, and is not known. There is very little known of Mr. James's ministerial character, but sufficient indications of it remain in the records of the town to evince that he was a faithful preacher and a prudent man.

Mr. James continued at East Hampton till his death in 1696. The people employed a Mr. Jones to assist him during the last three years of his life, in consequence of his age and infirmities, he having relinquished £40 of his salary to

enable them to do it. Mr. James ordered his body to be laid in a position contrary to that of his people, and he was buried in that manner.

November 20th, 1695, Mr. James sold and conveyed his real estate to John Gardiner, of Gardiner's Island, for £500, one half which was paid immediately, and Mr. Gardiner obligated himself to pay the other half to the *assigns* of Mr. James within one month next after his decease. From his selling his estate, and especially from the omission of any terms of relationship in the description of the persons to whom Mr. Gardiner was to pay the residue of the purchase money, it is inferred that Mr. James did not leave any posterity.

The Rev. Nathaniel Hunting succeeded Mr. James in the ministry at East Hampton. Mr. Hunting's grandfather came from England to Massachusetts, probably in 1636. He was ordained the ruling elder in the church at Dedham; at the same time Mr. Allen was ordained the pastor of that church.

Elder Hunting had a brother and brother-in-law in England, who were ministers, and he was cousin to the famous minister John Rogers, of Dedham, in England. Mr. Hunting graduated at Harvard in 1693. He came to East Hampton in 1696, and was ordained the minister of that town in September, 1699, and continued the sole minister of that place till 1746, when the Rev. Samuel Buell was called to assist him, on account of his age and infirmities. Mr. Hunting died in 1753.

The character of Mr. Hunting is thus drawn by the Rev. Lyman Beecher, one of his successors in the ministry at East Hampton, in a sermon preached at East Hampton in 1806.

"Mr. Hunting was a man of strong and distinguishing mind; firm and independent, without rashness and obstinacy; he was a hard student, and accurate scholar, and of extensive theological learning. His sermons, of which more than 100 volumes are now extant in manuscript, are written in a close and nervous style. They are the result of careful study; are written with great particularity and critical accuracy, abound with scripture references, and references to the most approved authors and commentators. They inculcate abundantly the depravity of human nature—the necessity of regeneration—the agency of God, and his sovereignty in this work—the insufficiency of works to justify, and that we are justified by faith only."

It is not known that Mr. Hunting ever published any of



his sermons, nor is it known that he wrote on any other subject. His manuscripts are in the hands of some of his descendants.

Mr. Hunting had five sons and one daughter. Two of his sons became farmers; one of them settled in East Hampton, and the other at South Hampton. Three of them received a liberal education. Nathaniel and Jonathan studied divinity and became preachers, but both were obliged to desist from preaching on account of their health. Jonathan died at East Hampton in 1750, in the thirty-sixth year of his age. Nathaniel also died at East Hampton in 1770 aged 68 years. Edward was a physician, and died at East Hampton in 1745, in the 42d year of his age.

Mr. Hunting's daughter married a Mr. Coit of New-London.

The several families of Huntings in East Hampton and South Hampton, and the Rev. Jonathan Hunting, the present minister of South Old, are descendants of Mr. Hunting.

The Rev. William Leveridge is supposed to have been the first minister of Huntington. He came from England with captain Wiggin and company, in 1633, with a view to settle at Pisquataqua, but not having sufficient encouragement to remain there, came to Boston and joined the church there, August 9th, 1635. From thence he removed to Plymouth.

Judge Davis in a note to his edition of Morton's history of Plymouth, states that it appears from the Plymouth records, that Mr. Leveridge assisted Mr. Partridge, the minister of Duxbury, a short space before he removed to Sandwich, and that he was teacher of the church of Sandwich a considerable time.

Mr. Partridge arrived at Boston in 1636. It is probable that he settled at Duxbury the next year, where Mr. Leveridge assisted him, and that he settled at Sandwich in 1638.

Wentworth, in his Journal, mentions Mr. Leveridge as the minister of Sandwich in 1639.

Morton, in his history of Plymouth, states that in 1642, the colony was adorned with a number of able and godly ministers, and enumerates Mr. Leveridge among the number.

There were a considerable number of Indians in or near Sandwich, where Mr. Leveridge was settled, and this led him to make some exertions to qualify himself for their instruction.



Mr. Elliott, of Roxbury, the celebrated Indian preacher, who translated the Bible into their language, in a letter of September 3d, 1651, to the commissioners of the society for propagating the gospel in New England, informed them that Mr. Leveridge and Mr. Blinman were fitting themselves for the work of the gospel among the Indians, of which they inform the society in their letter of the 10th of that month.

It seems that Mr. Leveridge did not continue at Sandwich a long time after this period.

In April, 1653, he visited Long-Island, and with certain others from that part of the country where he was settled, made a purchase of the natives of a large tract of land at Oysterbay, with the design of forming a new settlement or plantation there.

The deed for the land bears date April, 1653, and was executed to William Leveridge, Samuel Mayo and Peter Wright; the deed for Huntington was obtained the same month, and was given to Richard Holdbrook, Robert Williams, and Daniel Whitehead, who, with Peter Holdbrook, Anthony Wright, Charles Armitage, William Washborne, Daniel Washborne, and John Washborne, seem to have composed the same company that made both purchases, and probably came from the same part of the country.

Shortly after the purchase, Mr. Leveridge removed from Sandwich in order to commence the settlement of the new plantation at Oysterbay.

The vessel which conveyed him and his goods went to Hempstead Harbour within the Dutch jurisdiction, and landed the cattle and the goods there, "because there was no house erected at Oysterbay, in which the goods could be received."\*

It would seem that after his removal to Oysterbay, Mr. Leveridge devoted more or less of his time, either on Long-Island or elsewhere, to the instruction of the natives. It is probable that the English settlements in the neighborhood, in their infancy, were unable to support a settled minister, and that he divided his labours between them and the native tribes.

\* During the year 1653, war prevailed between the English and Dutch in Europe, and Rhode Island took part with the mother country. The vessel which carried Mr. Leveridge belonged to Capt. Thomas Willett, Samuel Mayo, William Paddy and John Barnes, of Barnstable, and was taken while within the Dutch limits, by Thomas Baxler, who was cruising against the Dutch commerce, under a commission from the authority of Rhode-Island, and the commissioners of the united colonies were obliged to interfere to procure the restoration of the vessel.—HAZARD'S COLLECTIONS.

From the accounts of the commissioners presented to the society for propagating the gospel in New England, it appears that they allowed Mr. Leveridge, from time to time, from 1653 to 1658, several small sums for his service among the Indians.

In 1657, the commissioners wrote to him to engage him to undertake the instruction of the Corchang and Montauk tribes at the east end of the Island, if his situation would admit of his being employed in that service.

It seems his settlement at Huntington about this period, prevented his accepting the invitation of the commissioners.

In 1658 he seems to have been established as the minister of Huntington. During that year, the people of that town appropriated land for his use, and in 1662 enlarged the quantity.

In 1658, Mr. Leveridge also had a grist mill erected on a stream that ran through the town, which was the first mill erected in the town.

Mr. Leveridge continued the minister of Huntington until 1670, when he removed to Newtown, and is supposed to have been the first minister of that town.

He remained at Newtown till his death, the date of which is not precisely known, but appears from the records of the town to have been previous to 1694. It is probable that it was not long before that year, and that he died at an advanced age.

In one of the books among the town records of Newton, there is a commentary on a considerable portion of the Old Testament, which is presumed to have been made by Mr. Leveridge. If so, it is no inconsiderable proof of his learning and industry. He is characterized by Hubbard, in his history of New England, as "an able and worthy minister."

The circumstance of his having been one of the original proprietors of Oysterbay, and of having erected a grist mill in the infancy of the town of Huntington, would seem to indicate that Mr. Leveridge must have possessed a considerable estate.

Some of Mr. Leveridge's posterity still reside in Newtown, and rank among the most respectable people of the town.

The Rev. Eliphalet Jones succeeded Mr. Leveridge in the ministry at Huntington. He was a son of the Rev. John Jones, who arrived at Boston in 1635, and settled at Concord in connection with the Rev. Peter Bulkley, in 1637. Mr. Jones did not continue many years at Concord. It seems

that an unusual number of people settled at Concord. The Rev. Ezra Ripley, the minister of that town, in a discourse delivered January 24th, 1792, states that a considerable proportion of the church and people finding the place too scanty for the comfortable subsistence of so many, a few years after the first settlement of the town, sold their possessions, went with Mr. Jones to Connecticut, and settled the town of Fairfield. From a petition of the inhabitants of Concord, dated in 1645, on file in the office of the Secretary of State of Massachusetts, it appears that the emigration took place in the summer or fall of 1644, and consisted only of a seventh or eighth part of the inhabitants, a much less proportion than Mr. Ripley supposed.

Mr. Jones was the first minister of Fairfield, and continued there till his death, the precise date of which is not known.

Mr. Wakeman, the next minister, settled in 1665; but might have settled as an assistant. It is probable that Mr. Jones died previous to 1668. In that year lands were laid out in Fairfield, to a Mrs. Jones who is supposed to have been the widow of the minister. In 1673, Eliphalet Jones, his son, conveyed a home lot of two acres, in Fairfield, to his nephew, John Bulkley, which was probably his father's; and in 1694, he conveyed to him two other tracts of land, in the same town, which are stated in the record to have been left him by his "honored father, John Jones."

From a record of births in Concord, found in the court records in Boston, it appears that the Rev. Eliphalet Jones, was born the 9th of the 11th month, 1640. It is not known where he received his education. It is not improbable that he was educated by the Rev. Peter Bulkley and his son who succeeded him—the first, if not both of whom, was a distinguished scholar, and with which family he seems to have been in some way connected.

In 1669, Mr. Jones was stationed at Greenwich, either as a missionary or settled minister. During that year the people of Jamaica voted to send a messenger to Greenwich to give him an invitation to visit that town in order to his settlement as their minister.

In May, 1724, Mr. Jones conveyed fifteen acres of land in Greenwich, to Eliphalet Hill, which he conveyed to Joseph Marshall, of that place, the same month. This land is supposed to have been allotted to him as one of the proprietors of the town, or to have been granted to him as a settlement, or as a remuneration for his services while he preached there.

In April, 1673, the people of Huntington authorized their magistrates, with certain others named for that purpose, to use their endeavors to procure a minister for the town.

It seems that they invited Mr. Jones to come among them, and that he visited the town some time before 1676. In January of that year, the people of Huntington gave him an invitation to *continue* among them as their minister, and at the same time voted to give him twenty acres of land where he chose to take it up.

Mr. Jones seems to have been very reluctant in assenting to a settlement, until he was assured of the general approbation of the people. It seems that he continued with them another year without closing with their proposal.

In June, 1677, the question was again put to the people at his request, whether they still desired his continuance with them as their minister, and was answered in the affirmative by all but one who were present.

Mr. Jones then settled among them, and continued the sole minister of the town until June 21st, 1719, when, on account of his age and infirmities, Ebenezer Prime was employed to assist him, and continued in that capacity until June 5th, 1723, when he was ordained as a colleague with him.

Mr. Jones gave the charge to Mr. Prime at his ordination, with which he was so much pleased that he entered it on the church records; and this, with the skeleton or outline of a single sermon, found among the town records, and supposed to be his, are the only productions of Mr. Jones that have been discovered.

At the time of Mr. Prime's settlement, the church consisted of forty-three members.

It is not probable that Mr. Jones was capable of much service long after Mr. Prime's settlement, although he lived a number of years after that period.

It appears from a receipt of a store-keeper with whom he traded, that he was living in April 1731, when he must have been upwards of ninety.

The tradition of the family, whose ancestor lived with him, is that he lived till he was nearly an hundred years old.

Mr. Jones seems to have been a man of great purity and simplicity of manners, and a faithful and successful preacher.

It is pretty well ascertained, that Mr. Jones did not leave any posterity, and that he gave his estate to Eliphalet Hill, who is supposed to have been his kinsman, whom he had



brought up, and who managed his business and took care of him in his old age.

The Rev. Nathaniel Brewster was the first minister of Brookhaven. His ancestry seems to be involved in some obscurity. He is supposed to have been a son of Jonathan Brewster, and grandson of the distinguished elder William Brewster, of Plymouth. It is supposed that Jonathan Brewster conducted or accompanied the settlers who commenced the settlement at Windsor, on Connecticut river, under the authority of Plymouth colony, in 1633, and that he continued to reside there some years, perhaps till 1643, when it is supposed that he formed a settlement at Mohegan, now Norwich. He died in 1659. The Rev. Nathaniel Brewster is supposed to have been the same person who graduated by that name in the 1st class of Harvard College, in 1642.

About that time, the laws enforcing uniformity were repealed, and others adopted which subjected the episcopal clergy to impositions incompatible with the rules of that church; in consequence of which great numbers relinquished their charges and the vacancies were supplied by presbyterian and independent ministers.

Some of those who had come to this country to escape ecclesiastical oppression, and to secure the enjoyment of religious freedom, returned to England and resumed the exercise of their ministerial functions; and others who had been educated in this country went over to England, during the suspension of episcopal authority, and settled in some part of that country.

Hutchinson, in his history of Massachusetts, states that most of those who graduated in the first class at Harvard College, went to England, and that Nathaniel Brewster was among the number, and "that he was a settled minister at Norfolk, and of good report."

He received, while in England, the degree of Bachelor in Divinity, at the college at Dublin, while it was in the hands of the dissenters.

In 1662, after the restoration of Charles II., episcopacy was restored, and the laws of uniformity re-enacted; in consequence of which, the presbyterian and independent ministers were in their turn obliged to leave their churches.

It is supposed that Mr. Brewster was among the number, and that he shortly after returned to this country, and settled at Brookhaven in the fall of 1665. At a town meeting held October 24th, 1665, the town voted to purchase the



house and home lot of Matthew Prior, for the accommodation of Mr. Brewster the minister. He continued the minister of Brookhaven till his death, in 1690.

It is a tradition of the family that Mr. Brewster married Sarah Ludlow, a daughter of Roger Ludlow, who was one of the most eminent men in New-England. He was a member of the council, and deputy governor of Massachusetts while he remained in that colony. He removed to Windsor in 1635—to Fairfield in 1640, and to Virginia in 1654. He was a member of the council and deputy governor, while he remained in Connecticut. He also principally contributed to the formation of the original constitution of 1639, and to the original laws of that colony. In 1649, he was employed by the assembly to reduce their various acts to a code or system, which they adopted. Mrs. Brewster, his daughter, is said to have been eminently distinguished for her talents and acquirements, and is supposed to have had the chief or sole management of the concerns of the family. Mr. Brewster left three sons, John, Timothy and Daniel, to whom he left considerable property, from whom the Brewsters on Long-Island, in Orange County, and in New-Jersey are descended. His son Daniel was a magistrate in Brookhaven for many years, and his descendants generally sustain a respectable rank in society.

The Rev. George Phillips succeeded Mr. Brewster in 1697, and for some time preached a part of the time at Smith Town. Mr. Phillips was the son of the Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Rowley, in Massachusetts, and a grandson of the Rev. George Phillips, who preached at Boxford, in Essex, in England, before he came to this country, and came over with Governor Winthrop to Boston, in 1630, and settled at Watertown, where he continued eminently useful to the time of his death, in 1644. The father of Mr. Phillips, the Reverend Samuel Phillips, of Rowley, died in 1696, aged 71; he left a number of children, among whom were Samuel, John, and George. One of the two first is said to have been a goldsmith, and settled at Salem. His son Samuel was the first minister of Andover; he died in 1771, in the 82d year of his age. His grandson Samuel was the founder of the Andover academy; he died in 1790, aged 76. His grandson, John Phillips, was the founder of the Exeter academy in New-Hampshire; he died in 1795, aged 76; and his great grandson, Samuel, was the late lieutenant governor of Massachusetts; he died in 1802, aged 50.—Of which branch of

this family of the Phillips', Doctor Miller in his review observes, that few families in this country have been more distinguished for liberal donations to religious and literary institutions than they.

The Rev. George Phillips was born in 1664—graduated at Harvard college, 1686. He preached at Jamaica a few years before he settled at Brookhaven. He settled in that town in 1697, and continued the minister there until his death, in 1739, aged 75.

Mr. Phillips was distinguished for a peculiar vein of natural wit. His ordinary discourse was tinged with this peculiarity; and tradition has preserved many of his speeches that exemplify it.

Mr. Phillips seems to have been a faithful preacher. He not only served his own church and congregation, but preached lectures in destitute congregations. He left three sons and three daughters. His descendants are numerous. The Rev. Ebenezer Phillips, of Easthampton, William Phillips, Esq., of Brookhaven, and George S. Phillips, Esq., of Smithtown, are his only male descendants on Long Island. The Phillips family in Orange county, and some of the name in New Jersey and Connecticut, are his descendants.

The Rev. Zachariah Walker was the first minister of Jamaica. Mr. Walker probably came from England before he was ordained; and it is supposed preached at Jamaica as a licentiate. He came to Jamaica in 1663, and is supposed to have removed to Stratford in 1668, where he was ordained. It is also supposed that he removed from Stratford to Woodbury in 1670.

The Rev. John Prudden succeeded Mr. Walker, at Jamaica. Mr. Prudden is supposed to have been a son of the Rev. Peter Prudden, who came to New-Haven in company with the celebrated minister John Davenport, and settled at Milford, in 1669.

Mr. Prudden graduated at Harvard college in 1668. He settled at Jamaica in 1670, and continued there until 1692, when he left that place and removed to Newark, in New-Jersey, and settled in that town.

Mr. Prudden had been a class-mate at college with the Rev. Abraham Pierson, jun., the minister of Newark, who removed from that town during the summer of 1692. About this time, or shortly after, Mr. Prudden seems to have visited Newark, probably with a view to obtain a settlement there.

August 23d, 1692, the people of Newark, at a town-meeting, agreed to invite Mr. Prudden to become their minister and settle among them, and offered him £50 a year and his firewood, for his encouragement and the comfortable subsistence of his family; and also voted that he should have and hold such a "propriety" and other conveniences for his accommodation in the town, as should be agreed upon between him and the committee appointed to confer with him—who reported his acceptance of their invitation and offer to the same town-meeting, or to one held the same day.

Mr. Prudden continued the minister of Newark, until June 9th, 1699, when, for some cause or other, not now known, he relinquished his charge.

He continued to reside in the town after his resignation, and seems to have enjoyed the esteem and confidence of the people. It appears from the records of the town, that when a vacancy in the ministry occurred, he was generally appointed one of the committee to procure another minister—that he was actively engaged in the settlement of two who successively succeeded him; and that he was uniformly employed to supply the pulpit in the intervals.

Mr. Prudden continued to reside at Newark, in a private capacity, until his death. He died December 11th, 1725, aged 80 years. Dr. McWorter, in his sermon of 1st of January 1801, states "that he sustained a worthy character, as a man of sense and religion, though he does not appear to have been a popular preacher." it is supposed that he possessed a considerable estate, which enabled him to live on his own means. His descendants are numerous—they chiefly reside in Morris county, New-Jersey, and are generally very reputable; and some of those in the female line, are said to have been distinguished as very useful and worthy members of society.

The Rev. Abner Reeve was the first minister of whom we have any certain knowledge that preached at Smith Town. It is supposed that he was born at South Old. He graduated at Yale College in 1731. It is said that he preached at Smith Town, West Hampton, the Fire-Place, Islip, and Huntington South; but it is not known that he was ever settled at any one of these places. It is supposed that he removed from Long-Island to Blooming-grove, in Orange county, and from that place to Brattleborough, in Vermont. Very little is known of his history. It is said that the late Judge Reeve, of Litchfield, in Connecticut, was his son.

The Rev. Naphthali Dagget, settled at Smithtown in 1751. Mr. Dagget came from Attleborough, in Massachusetts. He graduated at Yale College, in 1748. He remained at Smith Town till 1756, when he received an invitation from the trustees of Yale College to the professorship of theology in that institution, which he accepted. After the death of the Rev. Thomas Clapp, in 1766, Mr. Dagget officiated as president till 1777, when he resigned his office. He died in 1780.

The British troops, in their incendiary expedition against the several maritime towns of Connecticut, among other enormities that stained that transaction with infamy, after having taken Mr. Dagget and others prisoners, wantonly and shamefully beat and insulted him.

It is said that Mr. Dagget was a good classical scholar, and a learned divine.

#### *Of the Episcopal Church on Long Island.*

There was not an Episcopal church, or an Episcopal minister in the colony of New-York, at the time of the conquest, in 1664, and if there were any Episcopalians among the inhabitants, the number must have been very small. The inhabitants either belonged to the Dutch reformed church, or were English non-conformists.

While the colony was under the government of the Duke of York, the Catholics were encouraged, and very few Episcopal families emigrated to the colony.

After the revolution in 1688, the Governors, and usually most of the members of the council were Episcopalians, and the patronage of the government was almost exclusively confined to those who were of that persuasion. This held out a strong inducement to emigration to people of that denomination.

The Episcopal population was for some time pretty much confined to the city of New-York, and the first Episcopal church was erected there in 1696.

Although the statutes of uniformity did not extend to the colonies, and although the religious constitution of the colony was perfect equality among protestants of all denominations, yet the colony governors struggled to give some legal ascendancy to the Episcopalians over other denominations. They incorporated their churches, which they refused to the Presbyterians. They obstructed the Presbyterian Ministers who came into the colony in the exercise of their



functions, and under pretence of ecclesiastical authority, required them to apply to them for a license to preach. In 1707, Lord Cornbury tyrannically and illegally imprisoned two Presbyterian Ministers, and on some such pretences subjected one of them to great vexation and expense.

They were incessant in their application to the assembly for the establishment of a revenue for the support of the Episcopal clergy until they worried the assembly in some measure into a compliance with their wishes.

In 1693, the colonial assembly, subdued by the importunity of Governor Fletcher, passed an act for the settlement of ministers, and raising a maintenance for them in the city of New-York, and in the counties of Westchester, Richmond and Queens.

It is apparent from the language of the act, as well as from the history of the times, that it was not the intention of the assembly (the greater part of whom were of other denominations), to confine the benefit of the stipend exclusively to Episcopal ministers, and some efforts were made to give the act a general operation. In 1695, the assembly resolved that the benefit of the act extended to dissenting protestant ministers, but the Governor rejected that construction, and applied it solely to the Episcopal clergy, who continued to engross the benefit of it till the revolution.

By this act, Queens county was divided into two precincts, Hempstead and Jamaica. The precinct of Hempstead comprised the towns of Hempstead and Oysterbay, and the precinct of Jamaica comprehended the towns of Jamaica, Flushing and Newtown; and each precinct was required to raise £60 by a general tax on all the freeholders, for the support of the ministry.

There were at this time but a few families of Episcopalians in the several towns of Queens county, and it was deemed a grievance that the great mass of the people should be obliged to contribute to the support of ministers of another church.

In 1773 the people of Jamaica refused to pay the stipend to the Episcopal minister and made an appeal to the court of Chancery to be relieved from the burden, but it does not appear that they obtained any redress before the revolution relieved them.

There was no authority in the colonies that could, by the constitution of the Episcopal church, confer the ministerial office. The first Episcopal ministers that came to this

country, had been ordained by the bishops in England, and were sent out as missionaries by the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts.\*

The ecclesiastical concerns of the colonies were committed to the care of the Bishop of London. The native colonists who wished to take orders in the Episcopal church, were obliged to go to England for them, and this continued to be the case until the revolution.

Some time previous to that event, some efforts were made to have bishops sent to this country, but it was opposed by other denominations, under an apprehension that the measure would lead to the establishment of the Episcopal church, with the same prerogatives over other denominations with which it was invested in England. It is also intimated that the measure was opposed both by the American and British statesmen, but on quite different and opposite grounds. By the first, on the ground that, as it could only be effected by an act of Parliament, an admission of the power of parliament to do this would involve an admission that Parliament possessed power over the colonies, incompatible with the security of liberty, life, property and religion; by the last, on the ground that such an establishment would lessen the dependence of the colonies on Great Britain, and would remove a powerful obstacle to their independence.

The exclusion of any connexion between church and state, and the equality of religious privileges, secured to all denominations of Christians by the constitutions of the several states, precluded all objection to the introduction of Bishops into the United States after the revolution.

\* In 1762, there were 67 Episcopal missionaries in those parts of North America, which now compose the United States, to wit: in Connecticut 16, in New-York 10, in Pennsylvania 9, in Massachusetts 8, in New-Jersey 8, in North Carolina 5, in South Carolina 4, in Rhode Island 4, Georgia 2, and in New-Hampshire 1.

In 1773 the population of the colony of New-York was estimated at 150,000, and not more than one fifteenth part of it was supposed to be composed of Episcopalians.

At that time there were twenty-one Episcopal churches in the colony, supplied by as many missionaries; most of them were very small; none but those in the city of New-York, and perhaps Queens county, were at that time able to support their ministers without the aid of the tax, or of contributions from the society for propagating the Gospel in foreign parts, and all received some support from the society.

The state of the different sects of religion in the colony of New-York, in an estimate formed for that year, was as follows:

	Ministers.	Vacant Congregations.
Presbyterians,	48	15
Dutch Reformed,	23	24
Episcopalian,	21	
Quakers,	17	
Anabaptists,	12	4
Moravians,	2	
Lutheran,	3	10
Congregational,	2	

All the frontier settlements not organized into churches, were composed of Presbyterians and Congregationalists.

The Rev. Samuel Seabury of Connecticut in 1784, and the Rev. Samuel Provost of New-York, and the Rev. William White of Pennsylvania, in 1785, visited Great Britain, and were consecrated Bishops of the Episcopal church in those states respectively.

The consecration of these Bishops furnished the number necessary by the rules of the Episcopal church, to confer the Episcopal office, and they shortly after consecrated other Bishops for other states, and since that period the Episcopal church in the United States has been supplied with subordinate officers in each diocese, by ordinations by the Bishop of the diocese.

In 1789, the Bishops, clergy, and the representatives of the laity, of the Episcopal church, in the United States, met in convention, and made such alterations in the constitution of the Episcopal church as established in England, as renders it more conformable to our political institutions.

The first settlers of the town of Hempstead were independents, and had successively settled two congregational ministers. They had appropriated lands for the support of the Gospel, which those ministers had enjoyed, and had erected a house for public worship in which they had officiated.

Mr. Hobart, the last of those ministers, had left the town about the year 1796, and the people were some years without a minister of any denomination.

The new generation that had sprung up since the first settlement of the town, seem to have had no predilection for the peculiar tenets of their ancestors.

In 1701, some of the inhabitants petitioned the society for the propagation of the Gospel in foreign parts, to send them a minister.

In 1704, the Rev. John Thomas arrived among them as a missionary from the said society.

Mr. Thomas immediately commenced his ministerial labors at that place, and continued there during his life time.

Mr. Thomas died in 1724, and was succeeded by the Rev. Thomas Jenny, with whom the regular records of the church commence.

Mr. Thomas and his successor performed their ministerial duties in a house which had been erected for the use of the congregational ministers, without opposition or complaint.

It would seem that most of the people were in a short time reconciled to the discipline, rites and ceremonies, of the

Episcopal church, by the zeal and prudence of Mr. Thomas and Mr. Jenny.

The public lands being under the control of the majority of the people, as soon as they joined the Episcopal church, fell into the hands of the Episcopal ministers.

In 1734, they erected a new church, and the next year a royal charter was obtained, whereby the freeholders and inhabitants of said town who were in communion with the church of England were incorporated, and constituted a parish by the "name and style of St. George's church, Hempstead;" and whereby the house then built, together with half an acre of common land on which it stood, and on which the present parsonage house now stands, were granted to them.

In 1803, a house for public worship was erected by the Episcopalians in North-Hempstead, and was consecrated by the name and style of Christ church, but they continued in union with the people of Hempstead till 1819, when they became a separate and distinct congregation.

The introduction of the Episcopal church in Jamaica was attended with more difficulty.

The people of Jamaica were still generally Presbyterians or Independents.

In 1676, they set apart a tract of land and meadow for a parsonage, which they voted should continue "at the disposal of the town."

In 1700, they erected a stone edifice for public worship by subscription, without restricting the use of it to any particular denomination.

In 1702, Governor Cornbury, in consequence of a great sickness in New-York, removed to Jamaica; and to accommodate him, Mr. Hubbard, the Presbyterian minister, gave up to him the use of the parsonage house while he remained there.

During the time the Governor was at Jamaica, the Episcopalians got possession of the meeting house, and refused the use of it to the Presbyterians, and the Governor on his return to New-York gave them possession of the parsonage house.

The Presbyterians were anxious to regain the property which they considered had been unjustly wrested from them, and the Episcopalians were determined to retain what they supposed the law would protect them in holding.\*

\* In 1699, the people of Jamaica appointed certain persons to circulate a subscription to see what people would freely give towards building a new meeting house.



These conflicting claims continued to interrupt the harmony of the town nearly thirty years. After much heat and controversy, and several unsuccessful law suits, the Episcopalians abandoned the contest, and in 1735 erected a house themselves for public worship, which in 1761, was incorporated by Lieutenant Governor Colden, by the name and style of Grace Church. In 1737, when the seats of the new church were disposed of, the congregation consisted of twenty-four families.

This unpleasant contest, so contrary to the catholic spirit that now characterizes the different denominations of Christians, is to be ascribed to the temper of the times, and was probably fostered if not excited by the bigotry of the Governor.

St. George's church at Flushing, and St. James' church at Newtown, were built shortly after the one at Jamaica, and the same minister officiated one third of the time in each, until the year 1797.

In 1796, Newtown separated from the other towns, and employed Mr. Van Dyke as their minister.

In 1802, Newtown and Flushing united in the settlement of a minister, and in 1812, they separated, since which time each town has had its own minister.

The several Episcopal churches on the Island were erected at the times, and consecrated by the names and titles following :

In Brookhaven,	Caroline Church,	1730	
In Hempstead,	St. George's Church,	1734	
In Jamaica,	Grace Church,	do.	
In Newtown,	St. James' Church,	do.	} or shortly after.
In Flushing,	St. George's Church,	do.	
In Huntington,	St. John's Church,	1764	} or there- [abouts.
In Islip,	St. John's Church,	1766	
In Brooklyn.	St. Ann's Church,	1787	
In North Hempstead,	Christ Church,	1808	

Some of these churches have undergone repairs, and several of them have been rebuilt. New and elegant churches were erected in Hempstead and Jamaica in 1822, and in Brooklyn in 1824.

February 6th, 1710, the town appointed three men to demand the key of the stone meeting house, from the person in whose possession it was, and to keep the house for the town.

April, 1723, the town appointed three men to take possession of the town parsonage lot and other land connected with it, until the town should recall it.

January 2d, 1725, after stating that Mr. Poyer, the Episcopal minister, had failed in several ejectment suits, which he had brought against the tenants of the parsonage land, the town voted that the same should be delivered into the possession of Robert Cross, their Minister. Mr. Poyer, Justice Oldfield and Richard Combs, entered their protest against the said vote.

February 26th, 1727, the town assigned the stone meeting house and the land on which it stood, then in the occupation of Mr. Thomas Poyer, to three of the surviving trustees who built it, to take possession of it for the town.—Extracts from the town records.

*A list of the first Episcopal Ministers and their successors,  
in the several towns on the Island as far as the same  
could be procured.*

Names.	Where educated.	When graduated.	Settled.	Died.	Removed.	Remarks.
<b>HEMPSTEAD.</b>						
John Thomas,*	Europe,		1704	1724		* Missionaries from Society for propagating the Gospel.
Thomas Jenny,*			1725		1742	
Samuel Seabury,	Harvard,	1724	1742	1764		
Leonard Cutting,	Pembroke,	1754	1766		1784	
Thomas L. Moore,	Columbia,		1785	1799		
John H. Hobart,	Nassau,	1793	1860		1800	Bishop of New York.
Seth Hart,	Yale,	1784	1803			
<b>JAMAICA.</b>						
Thomas Poyer,	Europe,		1710	1731		Missionary.
Thomas Colgan,	do		1732	1755		do.
Samuel Seabury, jun.	Yale,	1748	1756		1765	Bishop of Connecticut.
Joshua Bloomer,	Columbia,	1761	1766		1790	
William Hammel,			1790		1795	
Charles Seabury,			1795		1796	
Elijah D. Rattone,	Nassau,	1787	1797		1802	
Calvin White,	Yale,	1786	1803		1805	
George Strebeck,			1805		1805	{ Six months each.
Andrew Fowler,	Harvard,	1783	1806		1806	
John Ireland,	England,		1807		1807	{ One year each.
Edmund D. Barry,	Columbia,	1804	1808		1809	
Timothy Clowes,	do.	1808	1809		1810	
Gilbert H. Sayres,	do.	1808	1810			
<b>NEWTOWN.</b>						
Van Dyke,			1797		1802	
Abraham L. Clarke,	Yale,	1785	1802	1812		
William Wyatt,	Columbia,	1809	1812			
Evan M. Johnson,	Brown Univ'ree	1808	1814			
<b>FLUSHING.</b>						
Abraham L. Clarke,*	Yale,	1785	1802	1812		* Preached at Newtown and Flush- ing.
Barzilai Bulkley,			1812			
John V. E. Thorne,	Union,	1811	1820			
<b>HUNTINGTON.</b>						
James Groaton,	Yale,	1754	1767	1773		The church served by supplies.
Edward K. Fowler,			1824			
<b>BROOKHAVEN.</b>						
Mr. Standard,			1725			
Alexander Campbell,	England,		1729			
Isaac Brown,	do.		1738		1747	Removed to Newark.
James Lyon,	Ireland,		1747	1786		
Andrew Fowler,	Harvard,	1783	1787		1788	
— Sands,						Served by supplies.
— Burges,						
Charles Seabury,			1814			
<b>ISLIP.</b>						
Thomas L. Moore,			1781		1785	Supplied by Ministers of Brook- haven.
<b>BROOKLYN.</b>						
George Wright,	Ireland,		1787		1792	
Mr. Doty,			1793		1795	
Samuel Nesbit,	Scotland,		1795		1797	
John Ireland,	England,		1798		1806	
Henry I. Feltus,	Ireland,		1807		1814	
John P. K. Henshaw,	Middlebury,	1803	1814		1817	
Hugh Smith,	Columbia,	1813	1817		1819	
Henry U. Onderdonk,*	do.	1810	1819		1827	Removed to Philadelphia.

\* In some cases, the time of settlement and removal of the above ministers has been inserted on verbal information, and may not be exact.

In most instances the facts are taken from records, and in cases where the records furnished no information, or were not to be procured, pains have been taken to get as correct information as possible.

*A brief account of some of the first Episcopal Ministers  
that settled on Long-Island.*

The first Episcopal Ministers who settled on the Island, as was before stated, were missionaries sent over by the society for the propagation of the Gospel in foreign parts, and were supported at the expense of the said society. They were born and educated in Great Britain or Ireland, and were generally well educated men.

The first Episcopal Church on the Island was established at Hempstead—and the first Episcopal minister who settled on the Island, was the Rev. John Thomas, who was sent as a missionary to this country at the solicitation of the people of Hempstead.

Mr. Thomas arrived at Hempstead in 1704. He found very few persons among the inhabitants who were acquainted with the discipline, rites and ceremonies of the Episcopal Church. He found the children without the means of education, and the state of society such as is usually the result of the want of public instruction and an established ministry.

Mr. Thomas had to encounter the difficult task of uniting a mixed and discordant population into one society, and of reducing them to order and regularity.

He immediately set about organizing a church, and introducing order and attention to religious duties.

In 1713, at his solicitation, the society for propagating the Gospel, made a grant of £10 a year for the purpose of aiding the establishment of a school and support of a competent teacher, for which the vestry returned them their thanks.

Mr. Thomas seems to have been laborious and successful in his efforts to meliorate the condition of the town.

In 1720, he informed the society that within eighteen months he had baptized one hundred and sixty persons, many of whom were adults.

Mr. Thomas continued at Hempstead till his death. He died in 1724.

The Rev. Thomas Jenny succeeded Mr. Thomas in 1725, and continued in that church till 1742, when he removed from there. Little is known of the character of Mr. Jenny.

The Rev. Samuel Seabury succeeded Mr. Jenny in 1742. Mr. Seabury graduated at Harvard College in 1724, and shortly afterwards settled as a congregational minister at

Groton, in Connecticut. After some time spent in that station, he became a convert to the discipline, rites and forms of the Episcopal church, and resigned his charge. He soon after joined the Episcopal Church, took the necessary steps to obtain orders, and was appointed to preach in New-London, April 10th, 1732. Mr. Seabury left New-London, and came to Long-Island and settled at Hempstead in 1742. He continued at Hempstead till his death in 1764.

Mr. Seabury was a popular preacher, and contributed to strengthen and extend the influence of the Episcopal Church in that part of the country.

The Rev. Thomas Poyer arrived at Jamaica in 1710, as a missionary from the society for propagating the Gospel in foreign parts, and was the second Episcopal clergyman who settled on Long-Island. He found the town distracted with a controversy between the Episcopalians and Presbyterians respecting the legitimate ownership of the lands which had been set apart for the support of the gospel in that town, and of the building that had been erected in 1700, by a general subscription, for public worship. These had been seized by the Episcopalians in 1702, for their exclusive use, and their right to them was vigorously contested by the Presbyterians, who at that time constituted much the most numerous proportion of the inhabitants.

Mr. Poyer, probably under the impression that the Episcopal Church in the colonies was entitled to the same ascendancy over dissenters as in England, joined the Episcopalians, and became their organ in their controversies with the Presbyterians.

This controversy disturbed the harmony of the town during the life time of Mr. Poyer, and was calculated to diminish the beneficial effects of the sacred function.

Mr. Poyer was strongly attached to the church, and had he not been unhappily entangled with this controversy he might have contributed probably essentially to her increase and extension. He died in 1731.

The Rev. Thomas Colgan succeeded Mr. Poyer in 1732. Mr. Colgan was also a missionary from the society for propagation the Gospel in foreign parts. He arrived at Jamaica in 1732, about the time the Episcopalians relinquished the struggle for the church and parsonage land in that town, and were directing their efforts to the erection of a church of their own, which they completed in 1734.

The Episcopalians in Newtown and Flushing about the



same time or shortly after, erected churches in those parishes.

Mr. Colgan, freed from the distracting cares which had engrossed his predecessor, was left at liberty to devote his whole time to his ministerial duties. Mr. Colgan continued in the charge of the three parishes till his death in 1755.

The Rev. Samuel Seabury, jun., first bishop of the Episcopal Church in the United States, and Bishop of Connecticut, succeeded Mr. Colgan in 1756. Mr. Seabury was the son of the Rev. Samuel Seabury, of Hempstead. He was born in 1728, and graduated at Yale College in 1748. He shortly after visited Scotland with a view of studying physic, but soon turned his attention to divinity. He went from thence to London, and was admitted to the order of deacon and priest in 1753. On his return, Mr. Seabury preached two or three years at Brunswick, in New-Jersey. In 1756 he removed from that place and settled at Jamaica on Long-Island. In 1765 he left Jamaica and settled at Westchester, in which place he continued until the Revolutionary War, when he retired to New-York; after the return of peace he settled at New-London. In 1784 he went to England for consecration as Bishop of Connecticut. In consequence of the occurrence of some difficulties (not of a personal nature) to the accomplishment of his wishes, he went to Scotland, and was consecrated by three nonjuring bishops. On his return he fixed his residence at New-London, where he continued in the faithful discharge of the duties of his elevated function, till his death in 1796.

Bishop Seabury was held in high estimation—he was warmly attached to the interests of the church, of which he was an ornament, and was indefatigable in his exertions to extend its limits, and to add to its reputation and influence.

The Bishop published a few detached discourses, and two volumes of sermons in his life time, and another volume was published after his death.

Within forty years past, there have been a number of Methodist societies formed on the Island, but the number is not exactly known.

There are a number of parishes in the several towns, and there are several congregational societies in the eastern part of Suffolk county, but the number and names of the ministers are not ascertained.

The Friends formed societies in Flushing and Oysterbay

at an early period of those settlements, which have increased and form a large proportion of the population of those towns, but the number of the societies is not known.

There are a number of Baptists scattered about the island, but no organized societies are known except at Oysterbay and Brooklyn.

*Of the several tribes of Indians on Long-Island.*

When the first settlements were made on the island by the Dutch and English, it appears, from the original Indian deeds, that the principal tribes that occupied it, were as follows:

The Canarse, the Rockaway, the Merikoke, the Marsapeague, the Secatague, and the Patchague, on the south side—the Matinecoc, the Nissaquague, the Satauket, and the Corchaug, on the north side; the Shinecoc, the Manhanset and the Montauk, from the Canoe Place to Montauk point.

The Canarse appears to have been the only tribe, or the only tribe of any consequence, in Kings county. This tribe claimed the chief part of the lands in Kings county, and a part of the lands in Jamaica.

The Rockaway tribe claimed the territory around Rockaway, and more or less of the lands in Newtown and Jamaica.

The Merikoke and Marsapeague tribes extended from Rockaway through Queens county into Suffolk, on the south side of the island.

The territory of the Matinecoc tribe extended from Flushing through Queens county to Fresh Pond in Suffolk, on the north side.

The Nissaquague tribe extended from Fresh Pond to Stony-brook.

The Satauket tribe claimed from Stony-brook to the Wading river.

The Corchaug tribe extended from the Wading river through South Old on the north side.

The territory of the Manhanset tribe was Shelter-Island.

The territory of the Secatoug tribe adjoined that of the Marsapeagues and extended to Patchogue.

The territory of the Patchogue tribe extended to South Hampton.

The Shinecoc tribe extended from the Canoe Place to Montauk, and that peninsula was the seat of the Montauk tribe.

There are one or two other tribes named in the old records,

but the place they occupied cannot be ascertained; and it is evident from that circumstance, that they must have been very small, perhaps the mere remnants of tribes which had been destroyed in their wars.

Those above enumerated are the principal tribes that occupied the island when the English and Dutch commenced their settlements there, and the original purchases of the several towns were made of these tribes.

The Indian settlements were all on the bays, creeks and harbors on the north and south sides of the island, and their territories were divided from each other by the middle of the island.

At the time of the first settlement of the Island, the whole Indian population was considerable, but by no means as great as the facilities of subsistence would have authorized us to expect, nor as great as it probably had formerly been.

The shell banks which indicate the sites of their villages, on the western half of the island, are large and numerous, and beds of shells of some size or other are found at intervals of a few miles all around the margin of the island. From these it would seem that the population of some parts of the island was once very numerous, or must have been stationary there a long time.\*

The state of the Indian population must be ascribed to their perpetual wars, by which they had been diminished.

All savage nations are addicted to war. The causes of war among them are numerous, and the mode of carrying it on destructive to their numbers.

It appears that Long-Island had been over-run by hostile tribes, and many of the natives must have been destroyed by them.

#### *Of the Political State of the Indians.*

The confederacy of the five nations extended their conquests as far south as Manhattan Island, and had passed over to the west end of Long-Island, and subdued the Canarse Indians.

There is a tradition among the Dutch, that at the time of the first settlement of the island, the Canarse tribe paid the Mohawks an annual tribute of wampum and dried clams, and that they discontinued the payment of it on the persua-

\* The shell banks in the western towns of Suffolk county are much larger and more numerous than in the eastern towns, where shell fish are as abundant: which proves that the western part of the island had been the longest settled, and that the Indian emigration proceeded from west to east.

sion of the whites, in consequence of which a party of the conquerers came and destroyed the whole tribe, except a few who happened to be from home.

Some writers have supposed that the conquest of the Mohawks extended to the whole island, but there is no tradition to support it, and it is believed that the conquest never extended beyond the territories of the Canarse Indians.

This may have been owing to the fact that all the other Indians were in subjection to the Pequots. It is well known that this tribe never was subdued by the five nations, and it would have been a violation of their rules of warfare, to have turned their arms against a tributary people, when they had not subdued the power that held them in subjection.

The Montauks had probably been the most warlike tribe on Long-Island, had overrun the other tribes on the island east of the Canarse territory, and had reduced them to some kind of subjection.

At the time of the first settlement of the island, the Montauk sachem claimed and exercised some kind of sovereignty over the whole territory, and it is stated that he justified his claim before the governor and council in virtue of a former conquest of the country. \*In 1659, he conveyed the territory which constitutes the town of Smithtown, then occupied by the Nissaquague Indians, to Lyon Gardiner.

It was under a belief of his superiority over the chiefs of the other tribes, that the first settlers were anxious to have their purchase deeds signed by that chief, as well as by the sachem of the tribe of whom the land was purchased.

The confirmation deed of Hempstead in 1657, the deed for Lloyd's neck, and others, are executed in this manner, and in some of the original deeds the Montauk chief is styled the sachem of Long-Island.

The superiority ascribed to the chief of that tribe after the settlement of the country, might have arisen in part from the distinction conferred on him or recognized by the commissioners of the united colonies.

In 1651, it is stated in some of our early records, that they constituted one who is supposed to have been the Montauk chief, grand sachem of the Long-Island Indians.

\* It is a little uncertain what was the general Indian name of Long-Island. In several old deeds the Montauk chief is styled the sachem of "Paumanacke, or Long-Island." Hubbard, in his history of New-England, states that at the time of the grant to the Earl of Stirling in 1635, it was called by the Indians Mattanwake, and in the patent to the Duke of York 1664, it is called Meitowax. It is believed that the name given by Hubbard was the general Indian name for the island.

By a statute passed April 10th, 1693, it was enacted that the island should be called Nassau, and should be so styled in all legal proceedings, which has never been repealed, but has by general consent been suffered to become obsolete.



It is probable that the commissioners only recognized or confirmed an authority with which they found him invested.

It is evident from the early writers of New England, that the <sup>\*</sup>Pequots, who occupied the country around New-London, and was the most warlike tribe in Connecticut, had subdued the Montauks with their tributaries, and that at the time of the first settlement of New-England, the Long-Island Indians were in subjection to the Pequots, and paid them a tribute. The victory over the Montauks involved the subjection of all the tribes that were under them, and the conquest of the Pequots must have embraced all the tribes on the island east of the Canarse territory.

In 1637, the New-England colonies made war on the Pequots, to avenge the murders and other hostile aggressions which they had committed on the whites, and subdued and dispersed the whole tribe. The Long-Island Indians who had been subject to the Pequots, immediately repaired to the English to make their peace with them. Winthrop, in his journal, states that on the reduction of the Pequots in 1637, "sachems from Long-Island came voluntarily and brought a tribute to us of twenty fathom of wampum each of them."

From this time they seem to have considered themselves to be in subjection to the English, and to have paid them tribute, perhaps the same they had paid to the Pequots. In 1644 they applied to the commissioners for some evidence of their relation to them, and the commissioners gave them a certificate in writing, in effect promising them security from injury by the English, and all others in friendship with them; at which time they assured the commissioners "that they had been tributaries to the English ever since the Pequot war, and that they had never injured the English or Dutch, but had been friendly to both," which implied that they had been subject to the Pequots and followed their fate.

In 1650, the commissioners sent captain Mason to Long-Island to require payment of the tribute due from the Indians there, and to settle a way in which it might be punctually discharged in future.

In 1656, the Montauk chief visited the commissioners at

\* "The Pequots were a very warlike and potent people about 40 years since (1624), at which time they were in their meridian. Their chief sachem held dominion over divers petty sagamores, as over *part of Long-Island*, over the Mohegans, and over the sagamores of Quinapak, yea over all the people that dwelt on Connecticut river, and over some of the most southerly inhabitants of the Nipmuck country about Quinabaug."

Boston, and in answer to an inquiry whether he had paid the tribute due from him stated that he had paid it at Hartford for the space of ten years, and that it was in arrear for the four last years, which they remitted in consideration of his distressed condition by the late war in which he had been engaged with the Narragansetts.\*

In 1653, Ninnigrate, the chief of the Nehantic Indians, who were either a tribe of the Narragansetts or closely connected with them, made war on the Long-Island Indians, which lasted several years, and reduced them to great extremity. He invaded the territory of the Montauks, and would have extirpated the whole tribe, if they had not found protection in the humanity of the people of East Hampton.

They were obliged to abandon their villages, and to flee for refuge to East Hampton, where they were kindly received, sustained, and protected. They continued to reside in that town for several years, before they deemed it safe to return to Montauk.

In 1655, Mr. Thomas James, the minister of East Hampton, and others, wrote to the commissioners and informed them that the Indians on the island must submit themselves and their country to the Narragansetts, unless they should speedily have some assistance.

The commissioners sent military supplies to the towns of East Hampton and South Hampton, and to the Indians. They stationed an armed vessel in the sound under the command of Captain John Youngs, with orders to stove Ninnigrate's canoes, and to destroy his forces if he attempted to pass over to the island.

The commissioners also gave orders, that in case the enemy should pursue the Indians within two miles of any of the settlements, the inhabitants should immediately repair to their assistance. During the same season they sent a small force against Ninnigrate, which was rendered ineffectual by the mismanagement of the officer who was entrusted with the command.

\* It is not easy, at this distance of time, to perceive the justice of the imposition of this tribute imposed on the Montauks, who, with a few exceptions of individuals of mischievous disposition, appear to have been uniformly friendly and faithful to the English. In 1650 the Pequots remonstrated against the tribute exacted of them, and inquired why it was imposed, and how long it was to continue, and whether their children unborn were to be subject to it. In answer to these inquiries, the commissioners stated that it was imposed in 1637 for the murders they had committed and which they had agreed to pay. They agreed, however, to remit all that was in arrear, and that it should only continue ten years longer, during which time it was exacted. It is not probable that the tribute was continued longer on the Montauks than on the Pequots, and the only cause of its imposition seems to have been their former subjection to that tribe, and that it probably ceased to be exacted in relation to both tribes after 1660.

In 1656, Massachusetts declined further aid in suppressing the war of Ninnigrate against the Montauks, and the whole burden of their defence devolved on the colonies of Connecticut and New-Haven. They generously continued Captain Youngs with his vessel on the same station that year at their sole expense, and the war seems not to have ceased until the end of the year 1656, or perhaps some time in 1657.

In one of their enterprizes, the Narragansetts, among others, took the daughter of Wyandance, the chief sachem, prisoner, who was ransomed by the aid of Lyon Gardiner, the first proprietor of Gardiner's Island, in gratitude for which, the chief, in 1659, presented him with a deed for the territory which now forms the town of Smith Town.\*

These various and successive general wars, with such as may have taken place between separate tribes, must have contributed greatly to reduce their numbers, and to render the whole island much less populous than it would otherwise have been at the time of the first settlement of the country.

Of the tribes that were found on Long-Island, there remain only a few families of Montauks and Shinecoes, with

\* Lyon Gardiner was a Scotchman, and had served as a Lieutenant in the British army in the low countries : he came over in 1635, and erected the fort at Saybrook, under lords Say and Seal, Brooke, and others, and had the command of the garrison until the fall of 1639, when he removed to the island that has since been called after him, which he had purchased of the native proprietors, and was confirmed to him by a deed from James Farret, "deputy of the Right Honorable the Earl of Stirling, Secretary of the Kingdom of Scotland," bearing date the 10th of March, 1639.

Lyon Gardiner's son David, born at Saybrook 29th April, 1636, is supposed to have been the first white child born in the bounds of Connecticut, and his daughter Elizabeth, born on the Island, September 14th, 1641, may have been the first English child born within the territory of New-York. Lieutenant Gardiner carried several families with him to the island, probably for security, as they removed to East Hampton as soon as that town was settled.

He seems to have been in high estimation both with the English and Indians.

Wyandance, in 1659, presented him a deed for the territory which now forms the town of Smith Town, in gratitude for the favors he had received from him. He removed to East Hampton, in 1655, and was frequently, if not uniformly, chosen to the magistracy of that town till his death in 1663.

Gardiner's Island, which at the time of the death of Lyon Gardiner, in 1663, was appraised at £700, now pays about one-sixth part of the taxes of East Hampton. The island contains 3000 acres, of which 600 are refuse, and about the year 1800 maintained on an average yearly :

In Winter, 200,	and in Summer, 340 head of neat cattle,
do. 60	do. 80 horses.
do. 40	do. 60 swine.
do. 1500	do. 2200 sheep.

There was at that time commonly raised on the Island yearly :

50 acres of wheat yielding about 17 bushels per acre.
25 acres of Indian corn, do. 35 bushels per acre.
15 do. of oats, do. 30 do.
10 do. of flax, do. 8 bushels seed per acre.

It yielded about 250 tons of English and 100 tons of meadow hay, and employed on an average, winter and summer, about sixteen hands.

This island has continued entire in the same family, and the present owner, David Johnson Gardiner, is the eighth owner, and seventh lineal descendant from Lyon Gardiner.

The celebrated pirate Kid called at this island on his way to Boston, when he returned from his cruise in 1699, and deposited there a box of gold, silver, and precious stones, under the charge and at the risk of the then owner, an account of which was found among his papers when he was taken up at Boston, and the box was delivered to the commissioners who were appointed to secure his treasures.—See appendix.

a few scatterings ones, at different places on the south side of the island.\*

*Of the state of Society among the Indians.*

The Indians on Long Island raised corn and vegetables, and these with the deer, wild fowl, and various kinds of shell fish and other fish that abounded on the Island, must have afforded them easy and ample means of subsistence; yet notwithstanding these advantages, they still continued in the hunter state, and had made no advances in the arts, which are usually first cultivated in the infancy of society. They were not distinguished by their dwellings, their clothing, their domestic utensils, or weapons of war, from the natives of the interior.

Except their canoes, of which those that belonged to the chiefs, were very large, and their arrow heads, which were curiously wrought out of the hardest stone, the only materials of art among them, seem to have been some rude vessels of earth hardened in the fire, and these are sometimes found in their shell banks.

The Indians on Long Island seem to have abounded in wampum, the Indian substitute for money. It was made out of the shells of different species of shell fish, of the size of beads, and perforated like them. The beads were black or blue, and white, and the black were double the value of the white, and this fact clearly shews that some standard of value is essential to social intercourse in the rudest state of society.†

The Dutch and English both, either from necessity or convenience, resorted to the use of this Indian money, and the value of it was fixed either by law or custom. In the early stages of the settlements, three black beads or six white ones passed for a penny.

Belts made of wampum were exchanged at the treaties between different tribes, as symbols to perpetuate the memory of the transaction.

The same causes that diminished the numbers and pre-

\* At the first settlement of the island, the Montauks were considerably numerous; their numbers were diminished by their war with Ninnigrate, in 1655, and by emigration from time to time to the Indian settlements on the main shore. In 1761 they amounted to thirty-eight families, and to 192 souls; subsequent to that time, the tribe was still further reduced by the emigration of a number with Sampson Occum and other Indians to Brothertown, in 1786. They do not at present exceed half a dozen families, nor amount to more than thirty souls.

† The Indians upon Long-Island seem to have abounded in this article. Winthrop in his journal states, that Massachusetts in 1634, sent the bark Blessing, which appears to have been the first vessel that was built in that colony, to Long-Island; and that the Indians there had "store of the best wampum, white and blue, and canoes that would carry 80 men."



vented the increase of the Indians, contributed to retard their progress in improvement and civilization.

The religious notions of the Long-Island Indians, are preserved in a communication of Sampson Occum, an Indian minister, which is published among the collections of the historical society of Massachusetts.

They had a plurality of Gods, but believed in one great and good being, who had the control over all the rest. They believed in an evil spirit, and had their conjurors or pawaws. They believed in a future state of existence, and that there would be a distinction according to their behavior here.

They made sacrifices to their Gods, and performed such other acts of worship, as are common among the Indians in general.

Their conjurors were said to have intercourse with the evil spirit, and by the Duke's laws of 1665, it was enacted "that no Indian should be suffered to pawaw or perform worship to the devil in any town within the government."

The language of the Montank Indians is supposed to have been the common language of all the Long-Island Indians, and differed but little from that of the Narraganset, the Massachusetts, and other New-England tribes.†

† It is supposed that there were only two original Indian languages in the United States, north of the Roanoak: the Delaware and the Iroquois. The languages of the different tribes of New-England, and most of the Indian tribes from the Mississippi to Nova Scotia, are only different dialects of the Delaware language.

The structure of the Indian languages is different from that of all known languages, ancient or modern; and there is a great analogy in this respect, between those that are radically distinct. The Indian languages have no substantive verb, and have no distinction of genders. The nouns are not varied to distinguish between male and female, but between animate and inanimate things. They admit of prefixes and suffixes, and sometimes bleed several words together, so as to make a whole sentence of a single long word.

These languages are made up of these combinations; not only pronouns but adjectives, conjunctions and adverbs are combined with the verb, and produce a great variety of forms of expression, and render them peculiarly copious and expressive.

The following Indian words are taken from a manuscript of the late John Lyon Gardiner, Esq., deceased, who took them down from the lips of the Montank Chief, and is the only specimen of the language that could be obtained:

Massakeat muod	great good spirit		
Machees cund	evil spirit		
Saunchem	king		
Seauuski	queen	mucquit	one
Wonnux	whiteman	uceze	two
Wonnuxk	white woman	nisk	three
Inchun	an Indian	yuaw	four
Wewauchum	Indian corn	sepaw	five
Mausqueseets	beans	conma	six
Ausgoote	pumpkins	nusus	seven
Quaubang	a round clam	swans	eight
Suxawang	a long clam	passeecond	nine
Tobaugsk	tobacco	pyunck	ten
Cheagaoan	a hatchet	cheesk	small
Niep	water	chiauk	large
Keagh or eage	land	weegan	good
Mashuee	a canoe	muttadeaio	bad
Mahaweeskt	a little child	wedaums	roast corn
Yunks quash	young woman	cut daus	boiled corn
Squasbees	little girl	seaump	pounded corn
Weenal	old woman	yeokeheag	roast corn pounded

*Of the measures adopted to preserve peace with the Indians.*

The Indians on Long-Island seem to have been less troublesome to the whites than those north of the sound.

It does not appear that they ever formed any general combination against the first settlers, or materially interrupted the progress of their improvements. The records of that period, furnish no account of any general war against the Long-Island Indians, by the Dutch or English.

There is no reason to believe that this exemption from Indian hostilities was owing to a better disposition or milder character of the natives of the Island. Individuals and small parties were sometimes troublesome to the settlers.

In 1649, a murder was perpetrated at South Hampton, and the town was greatly alarmed at the hostile appearance of the Indians for several days, and several murders were committed in the Dutch towns in 1652.

The towns were frequently jealous of them.

In 1645, the town of South Hampton ordered one half of their military company to bring their arms to meeting with them every Lord's Day alternately for some time.

In 1651, the town of East Hampton ordered the inhabitants to bring their arms with them on the Lord's Day, under the penalty of 12d. for every neglect, and other towns are said to have done the like.

The Indians sometimes committed depredations on the property of the whites.

In 1657, they did considerable damage to the people of

Massakeat Mund sumana Iushun wewachum.—Great spirit give Indian corn.

At the time the above words were taken down, there were no more than seven persons among them who could speak the language, and it may now be considered as extinct.

From the following table exhibiting the same words in the Massachusetts, Narraganset and Montauk languages, it is evident that they are all kindred languages, and that the three last are, with very little variation, the same dialect.

	Massachusetts	Narraganset	Montauk
one	Nequit	Nequit	Nucquit
two	Neese	Neese	Neese
three	Nisk	Nisk	Nisk
four	Yau	Yoh	Yuaw
five	Nepanna	Nepanua	Nepaw
six	Negutta	Qutta	Couma
seven	Nesausuk	Enada	Nusus
eight	Shw suk	Showsuck	Swans
nine	Paskoogun	Paskugit	Passecucond
ten	Piuk	Piuck	Pyuuck
king		Sachem	Saunchem
queen		Saunks	Seauksq
corn		Ewachlm	Wewauchum
land	Ohke	Anke	Keagh or eagh
water	Nippe		Neip
canoe		Mishoon	Mashuee
a girl		Squasese	Squashees
young woman	Nunksqau		Yunk Squash
old woman		Weinse	Weeuai

South Hampton, and in 1681, four Indians plundered a store in Huntington, and threatened the lives of the family.\* The first settlers in every part of the Island, were in the practice of guarding their cattle† which run at large, and it might have been to prevent the depredations of the Indians, as well as to guard them against injuries from wild beasts and other accidents.

The security of the whites must be ascribed to the means they employed to preserve peace with the Indians.

The English and Dutch both endeavored to secure uninterrupted peace with the Indians by treaty.

The reception of the Indians on the east end of the Island, under the protection of the Commissioners of the United colonies in 1644, and their subsequent appointment of the Montauk chief grand sachem of the Long-Island Indians, must have augmented the influence which he before possessed over more or less of the Indian tribes on the Island, and must have enabled and disposed him to curb any disposition manifested by them to annoy or interrupt the whites.

In 1643, the year before the Dutch war with the Indians north of the sound, the Dutch Governor made a treaty with Pennowits, sachem, as is supposed, of the Matinecock Indians.

In 1656, the Dutch Governor made a treaty with Tackapausha, the sachem of the Marsapeague Indians, and the representative of five other tribes.

Thus the Dutch on the west end, and the English on the east end of the Island, maintained a constant friendship with the natives in their respective neighborhoods, and while they were friendly with each other, the Indians from one end of the Island to the other were friendly with both.‡

\* In 1657, the Montauks committed depredations, and burnt a number of houses at South Hampton, and the people were obliged to betake themselves to their arms and stand on their own defence. Captain Masoe crossed the Sound to quell the disturbance, and imposed a fine of £700 on the Indians as a remuneration for the damages, and as a punishment for the aggression.

The chief sent a messenger to the Commissioners, and alleged that the damage was occasioned by a mischievous Indian, who had since destroyed himself and a negro woman, and prayed that he might be relieved from the fine, which was referred to the general court of Connecticut.

† In Johnson's "Wonder Working Providence," it is stated that when the English first commenced their settlements on Long-Island, "the Indians did much annoy their cattle with the multitude of dogs they kept, which ordinarily were young wolves brought up tame, continuing of a very ravening nature."

‡ Wolves were abundant upon the Island. In the account of the committee consisting of a commissioner from each town for adjusting the expenses of the county of Suffolk, November 10, 1685, the item for wolves was £43 13s., killed as follows: In East Hampton 16, South Hampton 3, South Old 1, Brookhaven 2, Smith Town 6, and in Huntington 15; in all 43 young and old killed, during the year preceding.

§ Considerable exertions were very early made to instruct the Long-Island Indians, particularly those of the Montauk tribe, in the principles of the Christian religion.

Both the English and the Dutch on Long-Island, respected the rights of the Indians, and no land was taken up by the several towns, or by individuals, until it had been fairly purchased of the chiefs of the tribe who claimed it.

The consideration given for the land was inconsiderable in value, and usually consisted of different articles of clothing, implements of hunting and fishing, domestic utensils, and personal ornaments; but appears to have been such in all cases as was deemed satisfactory by the Indians.\*

It is supposed some efforts to this effect were made by the Rev. Abraham Pierson, during the three or four years he continued at South Hampton.

Mr. James, the first minister of East Hampton, was the first who was regularly employed in this business. Mr. James was employed by Commissioners of the society for propagating the Gospel in New-England, for several years, to instruct the Indians on the Island.

In 1741, the Commissioners of the same society employed Azariah Horton as a missionary among the Long-Island Indians; and under his labours there was a great reformation among them. They then renounced their idols, and "in the course of two or three years it is said that he baptized thirty-five adults and forty-five children; religion however afterwards declined among them, and the mission was given up in 1751."

In 1755, or thereabouts, Sampson Occum, an Indian of the Mohegan tribe in Connecticut, was employed to keep a school among them, and afterwards to instruct them in religion till 1761.

No other missionary was regularly employed among these Indians until about 1800, when Paul Cuffee, a Long-Island Indian, was employed as a religious instructor among them by the missionary society of New-York. Paul continued his labours among them till his death. He died March 7th, 1812, aged 55 years.

Sampson Occum was born in 1723, was educated by Mr. Wheelock of Lebanon and Mr. Pomeroy of Hebron. A weakness in his eyes prevented his going to college; about 1755, he went to Montauk and established a school among the Indians. In the Spring of 1758, he was licensed to preach by the Association of Windham county, Connecticut, and on the 29th August 1759, he was ordained to the ministry by the Presbytery of Suffolk county, with a view to send him as a missionary among the southern Indians. This plan being defeated by a war between the whites and the Cherokees, he remained the most of his time between his ordination and the Spring of 1761 with the Montauks. He then engaged in a mission to the Oneidas, and continued with them until 1765, when he accompanied Mr. Whittaker to Europe to solicit funds for the Indian charity school. They remained there two or three years, and collected upwards of \$5000 for that charity in England and Scotland.

The Rev. Samuel Buell gives his character as a preacher, in a letter to the Rev. David Bostwick, of New-York, dated May 9th, 1761, he says: "as a preacher of the Gospel, he seems always to have in view the end of the ministry, the glory of God and the salvation of men; his manner of expression when he preaches to the Indians is vastly more natural and free, clear and eloquent, quick and powerful than when he preaches to others. He is the glory of the Indian nation." It is added by another hand, that "while in England he was an object of much attention, he preached in the crowded chapels of London, and even occupied the pulpit of Whitefield with acceptance."

In March 1768, he returned and resumed his missionary labors among the Indians in Connecticut, and in 1786 he removed with the Indians under his care, consisting of the Mohegans and the remnants of some other tribes, to Oneida, in the State of New-York, and settled on a tract of land given them by the Oneida tribe for that purpose, which from the union of different tribes that formed the settlement, they called Brothertown.

Mr. Occum continued in the charge of the Brothertown Indians until within a few years of his death. He died at New Stockbridge in Oneida county, in July 1792, aged 69 years.

\* The first purchase of Huntington in 1653, comprized nearly six miles square; the consideration paid to the Indians, consisted of six coats, six bottles, six hatchets, six shovels, ten knives, six fathom wampum, thirty muxes and thirty needles.

The first purchase of East Hampton, embraced about 30720 acres, and the articles given in payment consisted of twenty coats, twenty-four looking glasses, twenty-four hoes, twenty-four hatchets, twenty-four knives and one hundred muxes.

The first purchase of Oysterbay, embraced upwards of 20000 acres, for which the first purchasers gave six Indian coats, six kettles, six fathom of wampum, six hoes, six hatchets, three pair stockings, thirty awl blades or muxes, twenty knives, three shirts, peagne £4 sterling.

The decrease of the Indians is sometimes represented as if the whites were blameable for purchasing their lands. The decay of their numbers is a consequence of the settlement of the country by an agricultural people—the improvement of the country must diminish the game, lessen the means of their support, and drive them into the interior with the wild beasts that furnish their sustenance, while they retain the character of hunters. Providence certainly never designed that the earth should be kept desolate by erratic nations, but should be so used as to afford support to the greatest number of human beings.



Both powers endeavored to prevent the evils which usually result from the use of spirituous liquors by the Indians.

The Dutch Governor in 1643, and the English Governor in 1665, prohibited the sale of spirituous liquors to them.

In 1656, the town of Jamaica imposed a fine of 30 guilders on any one who should sell strong drink to an Indian.

The number and character of the Indians rendered it prudent for the first settlers to guard against surprise, and to be prepared to resist any attack by them. The several towns required every man to furnish himself with arms and ammunition, and to assemble at an appointed place in case of an alarm. In some of the English towns a block house or small fort was erected as a place of security in time of danger.

The people of Gravesend, in the infancy of their settlement, inclosed their village with palisadoes.

The Dutch Governor in 1645, and the English Governor in 1665, forbid the sale of arms and ammunition to the Indians.

In 1641, the town of South Hampton resolved that if any one should sell any warlike implements to the Indians, he should forfeit his whole personal effects. In 1650, the town of East Hampton resolved that whosoever should sell powder, lead or shot, sword or flint to any Indian, he should be liable to the penalty of 20s., and if any one should sell a gun or pistol to one, he should pay £10.

It may have been partly in consequence of the destruction of their warriors, in their recent wars, and of their military spirit being broken by their subjection to successive conquerors; but it was principally by cultivating the friendship of the chiefs, and particularly of the grand sachem of the whole, by respecting their rights and treating them with uniform justice and kindness, by preventing excitement by artificial means, and by rendering success hopeless by withholding the means necessary to insure it, that the whites

The United States as the British government formerly did, permit the Indians within the limits of their political jurisdiction, to retain their own customs, to choose their own rulers, to make treaties and preserve their relations with each other. They are not subject to our laws, and are not required to perform the duties of citizens; they are suffered to retain their independence, subject to our protection and control, so far only as their own welfare and the public safety require.

The government concedes to them the right of occupation, and claims the right of soil or ultimate domain. It suffers no advantage to be taken of the necessities or imbecility of individuals, by the fraud or avarice of our own citizens.

An Indian territory belongs to the tribe or nation, and cannot be sold by individuals. The alienation of their territory is a national act, and can only be done by treaty. The extinguishment of Indian claims, therefore, is an act of sovereignty, and no purchase made by an unauthorized individual is of any validity, nor was any purchase ever considered as legal from the first settlement of the country, which was made without authority, until it was confirmed by patent or some other act of government.

were exempted from any hostile combinations of the Long-Island Indians.

In 1655, a large body of Indians consisting of 500 and upwards, from Jersey and the north river, landed at New-Amsterdam, where they were provoked into hostilities and did much injury. They then went to Staten-Island and committed great havoc there, and a party of them passed over to Long-Island and threatened Gravesend, but retired without doing much injury. The fortifications of New-Amsterdam, and of the villages in its vicinity, by enclosures of pallisadoes, was to secure them against the same Indians, who from 1640 to 1663 committed many acts of hostility on the Dutch settlements.\*

That none of the Long-Island Indians were concerned in these depredations is evident from the admission in the Dutch records, that those Indians had originally no hostile designs against that place, but were then on their route to the east end of Long-Island to make war on the Indians there.

This belief is corroborated by the fact, that in the treaty made at Hempstead, March 12th, 1656, with Tacapausha, the Governor stipulated not to make peace with those Indians who did the damage at Manhattan in September 1655, without including them, for which no other reason can be given than that they were the enemies of the Long-Island Indians.

#### *Of the Battle at Fort Neck.*

The only rencounter of any importance between the whites and the Indians on Long-Island, of which we have any ac-

\* The statement in the text is supported by the authority of the Dutch records. August 1649 several planters were massacred by them at Staten Island; 1642 the Governor ordered an attack on the savages.

February 26th, 1643, the Governor complained of the insolence of the savages for two or three years past—that they came in droves of 50 in sight of the fort—that they had taken horses, cows, hogs and geese, and had murdered seven persons and refused to give up the murderers, and ordered preparations for an attack.

In 1644, a general war was commenced with the savages north of the Sound and west of the Connecticut settlements, which lasted till the summer of 1646, and was terminated by a great battle at Strickland's plain, in Horseneck, in which the Dutch with difficulty obtained the victory.

September 5th, 1655, a body of Indians landed near the fort of New Amsterdam in 64 canoes, consisting of more than 500 warriors, on an expedition against the Indians on the East end of Long-Island. Some of them broke into an house which provoked an affray. The Indians were attacked by a detachment from the fort, and compelled to embark, but they continued in the neighborhood three days, killed fifty persons and took one hundred prisoners, burnt forty-eight houses and destroyed cattle and did much damage. They then landed on Staten-Island, massacred sixty-seven persons, crossed the Narrows and surrounded Gravesend, which was relieved by aid from the city.

February 7th, 1660, the Governor states that during his administration of twelve years, upwards of twenty persons had been killed by the Indians.

January 7th, 1663, the Governor complains that the Indians had killed eighteen persons and taken ten prisoners within a short time before that date, and had burnt and destroyed houses and other property.

June 7th, 1663, the Indians attacked Esopus, burnt part of the town, killed and wounded a number of the inhabitants, and took many of them prisoners.

count from history or tradition, is one that took place at Fort Neck, on the south side, in Oysterbay, which seems to have been the principal seat of the Marsapeague Indians.

The war in Europe, between the Dutch and English, which continued from 1652 to 1654, had an influence upon their respective colonists.

In the spring of 1653, it was believed that the Dutch government contemplated the expulsion of the English from the territories which they claimed, extending from the Delaware to Connecticut river, including the whole of Long-Island.

A Dutch fleet was expected from Europe, and the Dutch governor was suspected of tampering with the Indians, to procure their co-operation.

The Indians, in many places, suddenly began to manifest a hostile carriage towards the English. Several chiefs on Long-Island sent a messenger to Hartford, to inform the English that they had been offered guns, swords, ammunition and clothing, by the Dutch fiscal, or treasurer, if they would join them to destroy the English. It seems also that great efforts were made, and in some cases with success, to induce them to renounce their grand sachem the Montauk chief, who was the unwavering friend of the English.\*

Captain John Underhill, who had the principal command in the recent war of the Dutch with the Indians, and had rendered them essential service, had settled at Flushing, and observed the change in the disposition of the Indians. He obtained from them the secret of the Dutch machinations to enlist the Indians against the English, and communicated the facts to the commissioners of the united colonies.

In consequence of the disclosure of the intrigues of the Dutch treasurer with the Indians, by Captain Underhill, he was seized at Flushing by a guard of soldiers, and carried to New-Amsterdam, and confined until the case was examined, when the facts reported by him were proved by the testimony of the Indians, to be true. He was then coolly

\* The Dutch Governor denied the existence of any such plan, or of any concert with the Indians; and proposed that persons should be sent to examine into facts. Three persons were sent for this purpose, and he appointed three to act with them. The English commissioners were not satisfied with two of the Dutch commissioners, nor with the manner in which the Governor required the testimony to be taken, and returned without accomplishing the object of their mission, or having their suspicions diminished.

That such a plot was formed was firmly believed on Long-Island at the time, nor can the change in the disposition of the Indians, and especially their renunciation of the authority of the Montauk chief, who was a warm friend of the English, be accounted for in any other way. The Dutch Governor may have been ignorant of the intrigues of the fiscal with the Indians, but that such intrigues took place can hardly be doubted by any one who will examine the evidence.

dismissed, and the treasurer was suffered to go without reproof or punishment.

The English towns on the island, as well as those which had been settled under the Dutch as the English, were alarmed for their safety.

March 26th, 1653, the town of East Hampton resolved that no person should sell any kind of provisions to the Indians, "during the time of the neighbors' plantation being in this posture."

April 15th, they ordered "that there should be a watch and ward, that two men should watch every night, and one to ward every day."

April 26th, they resolved "that no Indian should come to the town unless on special occasion, and that none should come armed, because that *the Dutch have hired Indians against the English*, and because the Indians have cast off their sachem."

May 6th, they agreed to send to Connecticut for a firkin of powder, and shot equivalent, and ordered "that every man on any alarm, should appear forthwith at the meeting-house, and that no man should go from the town to work, or stay in another town, under the penalty of 40s. for every day's absence."

April 14th, 1653, the town of South Hampton passed a resolution, "that every male between 16 and 60 should watch and ward as occasion is, and that no one should sell any corn to the Indians, pending the war *between the English and Indians*."

June 16th, they sent a messenger to Captain John Mason, at the mouth of Connecticut river, to procure a stock of ammunition.

Captain Underhill,\* early in the spring, wrote to the com-

\* Captain John Underhill came from England to Massachusetts soon after the first settlement of that colony. He had served as an officer in the British forces, in the low countries, in Ireland, and at Cadiz, and had a command in the war with the Pequots during the year 1637. He had some difficulty with the church at Boston, which seems to have been adjusted before he left that part of the country.

After the termination of the Pequot war, he removed to Connecticut, and settled at Stamford. He was a delegate from that town to the general court at New-Haven, in 1643, and was appointed an assistant justice there.

During that year he was sent for by the Dutch governor, to take a command in the war in which the Dutch were then engaged, or were about to commence, with the Indians situated north of the sound and west of the Connecticut settlements. This war lasted till the summer of 1646, and was terminated by a great battle at Strickland's Plain, in Horseneck, in which the Dutch with difficulty obtained the victory.

It is supposed that Captain Underhill had the chief command under the Dutch governor in this war, and it is stated by Trumbull, in his history of Connecticut, that he destroyed three hundred Indians north of the sound, and one hundred and twenty on Long-Island who had crossed the sound in order to ravage and destroy the Dutch plantations there. After the conclusion of the war, he settled at Flushing, on the island. He discovered and disclosed the intrigues of the Dutch fiscal with the Indians, in order to detach them from the English, and to excite them to hostilities against them in 1653.



missioners of the united colonies, to apprize them of the designs of the Dutch, of their tampering with the Indians, and of the danger to which the English on Long-Island were exposed.

April 19th, 1653, the commissioners of the united colonies, at a special meeting at Boston, took the state of the country into their consideration, and six of the eight were for embarking in the national quarrel with the Dutch, but were restrained by the refusal of Massachusetts, whose remoteness from the scene of danger rendered her insensible to the condition of her countrymen who were more exposed to the incursions of the enemy.

The other colonies deemed the refusal to be a breach of the articles of their union, and the dispute threatened the dissolution of the confederacy. Massachusetts, however, after the danger was passed, and she could do it without the risk of expense in men or money, relinquished her construction of the articles of union, and thus appeased her allies, whom she, on more than one occasion, treated with the like indignity.

Captain Underhill probably, immediately after he found that the commissioners were divided in opinion respecting the expediency of embarking in the war, wrote to the colony of Rhode-Island, where it is supposed that some if not most of the original inhabitants of Flushing, and also some of the people of Oysterbay, had resided some time before their settlement in those towns, and where they probably had friends, to inform them of the danger to which they were exposed, and to solicit some assistance for their security. In consequence of this information, it seems a Mr. Dyer, with a few resolute men, voluntarily went to Flushing to aid them in case of an attack. The people of Rhode-Island had received letters from the council of state in England, investing them with discretionary power in relation to their taking part in the war against the Dutch, and they came to the resolution

On the refusal of the commissioners of the united colonies to embark in the war then subsisting between England and Holland, he applied to Rhode-Island, which colony had taken part with the mother country, for assistance.

He received a commission from that colony with the aid of a small number of volunteers, authorising him to act in defence of the English towns against any attack of the Dutch or Indians and with regard to further hostilities, to act in conformity with such orders as the colony should prescribe.

Under this commission he made the attack on the Indians at or near Fort Neck, and took their fort, and thus contributed to arrest the defection of the Indians, to defeat the hostile designs of the Dutch against the English settlements, and to preserve the peace of the island.

In 1665, he was a delegate from the town of Oysterbay, to the assembly held at Hempstead, by Governor Nicolls, and was appointed by him under sheriff of the north riding of Yorkshire, or Queens county. In 1667, the Matinecoc Indians gave him a deed for 150 acres of land, which has remained in the family ever since, and is now in possession of one of his descendants that bears his name. It is supposed that Captain Underhill died at Oysterbay in 1672.

so far to embark in the support of the mother country, as to issue letters of marque and reprisal against the Dutch commerce on the high seas.

On the 17th of May, 1653, the assembly of that colony took the application from Long-Island into consideration, and generously agreed to afford them what help they could, to enable them to defend themselves against the Dutch, the enemies of the commonwealth, or to make aggressions on them if the assembly should deem it necessary.

They also granted commissions to Captain John Underhill, William Dyer, and Edward Hall, to go against the Dutch, or any enemies of the commonwealth of England, and allowed them to take twenty volunteers out of the colony, with certain pieces of ordnance, subject to such orders as the assembly should prescribe.

In the early part of May, the town of Hempstead sent Richard Gildersleve and Alexander Rhodes, and Newtown sent Robert Coe and Edward Jessup to the commissioners of the united colonies, to apprise them of the danger with which they were threatened, to solicit a supply of arms and ammunition, with the aid of a few men, or an officer capable of disciplining their own militia.

May 23d, Captain Underhill wrote again to the commissioners, stated that all the English were in extreme danger, that he had sent for some small assistance from Rhode-Island to preserve things in safety, and informed them "that he had put his life in his hands to save English blood," and urged them in the most pressing manner to act with vigor.

The application was again rendered ineffectual by the adherence of Massachusetts to her resolution to decline any interference in the national quarrel.

The English towns were thus compelled to rely for their security upon their own resources, and such assistance as they had received from the disinterested friendship and patriotism of Rhode-Island.

It does not appear that the Dutch ever made any attack upon the English towns, or that Captain Underhill and his companions were under any necessity of repelling any assaults of the Dutch.

It seems, however, that the Dutch had neglected or were unable to allay the hostile temper of the Indians, which they had excited, and that it became necessary to make an example of such as were most forward in their meditated hostilities, in order to subdue the refractory spirit that prevailed among them.

The public records furnish no further light on the subject, and we are compelled to resort to tradition to learn the result of the state of things that then existed in relation to the English and Indians on Long-Island.

The tradition is that a number of Indians, whose intentions were supposed to be hostile to the English, had collected at or near Marsapeague, at which place they had a fort, on a neck called from that period, in consideration of that circumstance, Fort Neck, the remains of which are still very distinct, which they had constructed for their defence, or which had been erected on some former occasion for the like purpose.\* That Captain John Underhill led a party against them, attacked and destroyed a number of them, took the fort, and kept possession of it in order to prevent the reunion of the Indians, to watch their movements, and to guard the English settlements against their incursions.

April 16th, 1663, the Dutch governor complained that Governor Winthrop had not, according to agreement, delivered Fort Solomon, on Long-Island to the Dutch. It is presumed that Fort Solomon was the one on Fort Neck. It was in Oysterbay, to more or less of which the Dutch laid claim, and was the only fort in possession of the English within the territory which the Dutch pretended to claim.

It is impossible, at this distance of time, to judge of the propriety or necessity of this attack upon the Indians. The measure may have been warranted by the state of things at the time, and may have saved the English settlements from massacre and devastation.

It is probable that these Indians had been gained over by the intrigues of the Dutch, and had assembled in order to aid them in their projected enterprize against the English, and that the transaction took place in the summer of 1653.

The project of the Dutch miscarried by their inability to unite the Indians in the scheme, by the defeat of the Dutch fleet in Europe, and by the subsequent peace.

After the war, the colonists resumed their friendly relations, but the impressions made on the minds of the English, by the sanguinary project of the Dutch government, were never effaced but by the conquest, in 1664.

June 11th, 1666, the English Governor held a treaty at Hempstead with Takapausha, the Marsapeague sachem, and

\* The fort is situated near the meadows, about the centre of the neck. Its form is quadrangular, with an opening of about twelve feet wide at the south east angle. The ditch is now three feet deep, and the embankment as much as three feet above the level of the adjoining plain. It probably extends about ten rods one way, and six the other.

other tribes who had probably thrown off the authority of their grand sachem, and had united with the Dutch against the English, by which they made peace with the English and submitted to their government.

We have no further account of any difficulty with the Long-Island Indians until the time of King Philip's war. This was the most destructive Indian war in which the New-England colonies had ever been involved. It commenced in June 1675, and lasted till August, 1676, and during its continuance was attended with great destruction of property and the loss of many valuable lives.

From the proximity of Narragansett to Montank, it was apprehended that the Long-Island Indians might be seduced by the Narragansetts to aid them in their hostilities against the whites. To prevent this the governor of New-York determined to cut off all intercourse between them.

December 13th, 1675, the governor ordered all the canoes east of Hell-Gate to be seized, and delivered to the constables, to be laid up and secured within three days, and also ordered that all such canoes as should be found in the sound after that time should be destroyed.

This measure deprived the Indians of the means of crossing the sound, and effectually prevented their lending any assistance to the hostile Indians.

Since that period, no danger seems to have been apprehended from the Indians on Long-Island, and from that time they have gradually diminished and disappeared, till only a few families are left.

*Of the political condition of the several towns in the Dutch Territory on Long-Island.*

The states general of the United Belgic Provinces, in their grant to the Dutch West India company, in 1621, reserved to themselves the power of commissioning the governor whom they should appoint.

The object of this reservation was to connect the interests of the company with the mother country, and to secure the supreme control over the whole empire.

The first governor mentioned in the Dutch records, is Wouter Van Twiller, who arrived at New-Amsterdam, now New-York, in June, 1629.

It is intimated in a letter of Governor Kieft, that Peter Minuit, preceded Van Twiller, and very probably he was



preceded by others, either as commercial or political superintendents of the Dutch establishments.

William Kieft succeeded Van Twiller in March 1638, and he was succeeded by Peter Stuyvesant in May 1647, who continued in power till the conquest by the English, in 1664.

All the powers of government, executive, legislative, and judicial, civil and ecclesiastical, were vested in the governor and council.

The governor, directly or indirectly, appointed all public officers, framed all the laws, and decided all important controversies, heard appeals from subordinate magistrates, and required them to send such cases as were pending before them, to the council to be decided as he thought fit.

April 12th, 1660, the governor ordered the magistrates of Rustdorpe, or Jamaica, to refer a certain cause then pending before them, to the council to be determined.

April 26th, 1660 the magistrates of Middleburgh, or New-Town, were ordered to do the same.

The governor ordered churches to be built—he installed ministers, and directed where and when they should preach, and he excluded such from teaching, whose tenets he did not approve.

The governor had the sole prerogative over the public lands. The Indian title was extinguished by him, or by individuals with his consent.

The governor granted such lands as had been purchased of the Indians, to individuals or companies for settlement. These grants were generally, if not uniformly, made subject to a reservation or quit-rent of one tenth of the produce, to become payable ten years after the date of the grant.

From the complaints of the delegates who met in 1653, to lay their grievances before the governor and council, it appears that the governor exercised his prerogative in a capricious manner, sometimes refusing lands to settlers, and at other times making large grants to favorites.

#### *Of the Dutch Towns.*

It appears that the Dutch towns were settled by the casual concurrence of individuals, without any previous regulations relative to their organization, or the administration of justice among them. Nor does it appear that they entered into any bond of union among themselves for self-government.

In the infancy of the settlements, the governor appointed magistrates in the several villages, with more or less power as he judged proper, without any uniformity as to their number or title of office.

In 1660, on a petition of the inhabitants of New-Utrecht, the governor appointed a scout or constable, a secretary, and an assessor, with power to divide the land that was held in common, by lot among the proprietors—to see that the fields were fenced—to open a common street through the village—to erect a block house in the centre, with a mill in it, and a well by it, at the common expense, and to decide all differences, and to do as all other subaltern village courts are accustomed to do.

From this it appears that the first magistrates in the several villages, had full power to regulate the police, and provide for the security of the village.

After the settlers had become more numerous, and the towns were enlarged, they were permitted to choose their own magistrates, subject to the approbation of the governor. It would also seem that the powers of the magistrates were then enlarged, but were not defined by any general law, and were in a great measure discretionary.

In 1646, Brooklyn was permitted to choose two magistrates, who were authorized “to give judgment in all events as they should deem proper, not contrary to the charter of New-Netherland;” and to give complete effect to their authority, the governor ordered that if any one disobeyed the decision of the magistrates, he should forfeit his right to the lands within the village.\*

In 1661, the governor enlarged the powers of the magistrates, or rather established a new court with larger and more definite powers than he had before granted. The magistrates who were chosen and allowed for this court, were authorized to decide all controversies between master and servant, master and apprentice, buyer and seller, landlord and tenant, and also to take cognizance of breaches of the peace, and other misdemeanors.

The Dutch courts proceeded according to the rules of the civil law, which was the Dutch common law.

The Dutch towns seem to have been governed principally by the ordinances of police enjoined by their magistrates.

\*This privilege seems not to have been extended to any other town, from which it is presumed that no other town was at that time so populous as to require them.

*Of the English towns under the Dutch.*

The English who settled the towns of Hempstead, Gravesend, Flushing, Jamaica, and Newtown, became Dutch subjects, and were permitted to hold land, enjoy liberty of conscience, and to choose their own magistrates, subject to the approbation of the governor.

Hempstead and Gravesend were incorporated towns, and were authorized to choose their own magistrates, who were to be presented to the governor for his approbation, and also a scout and clerk.

The magistrates were vested with power to hold courts, civil and criminal, with a limited jurisdiction, and to make ordinances for the welfare and good government of the towns respectively.

Flushing was also partially incorporated, but was by its charter only authorized to elect a scout or constable with power to preserve good order, heal differences, and report all cases of importance to the governor. It is probable that the people of Flushing were afterwards indulged with the power of choosing magistrates like the other towns.

Jamaica and Newtown were permitted to choose their own magistrates, subject to the confirmation of the governor. It was the practice in these, if not in all the English towns, to choose double the number to which they were entitled, out of which the governor named those that should serve.

In all the English towns, the people chose a certain number of men, whom they called townsmen, to superintend the civil concerns of the towns for which they were elected. They co-operated with the magistrates in the incorporated towns, and in the other towns made all such regulations as they judged beneficial to the town; (except such as related to the admission of settlers, and the granting of lands,) which were to be submitted to the people in town-meeting for them to confirm or annul.\*

It is probable the courts in the English towns for some time decided without a jury; but towards the latter part

\* The power of the townsmen seems to have extended to all such regulations as related to the police of the towns—they prescribed rules for the making and repairing of fences—they regulated the time when the cattle should be turned into the common fields and taken out, and prescribed the rules by which the herdsmen were to be governed. March 17th, 1659 the magistrates of Hempstead resolved "to stand by and bear out the townsmen in giving effect to all such rules and orders as they should make for the good of the town, that year, except such as relate to the admission of inhabitants and the granting of land."—These last two powers were in all the towns reserved as the sole prerogative of the whole people in town meeting.

It was usual for the magistrates of Hempstead, after every election, at least for a series of years, to adopt similar resolutions.

of the time they were under the Dutch, they seem, in one town at least, to have made an effort to adopt the principles of the common law.

December 1st, 1663, the town of Jamaica resolved, in town meeting, that the magistrates of that town should proceed "according to the laws of England, as near as they could."

The English towns under the Dutch government, seem to have been governed principally by the ordinances of their townsmen, and the acts made at their town meetings.

*Of the Tyranny and Imbecility of the Dutch Government.*

It seems that the governor sported with the rights of the people, by wantonly rejecting such magistrates as they had chosen, merely to gratify his humor or caprice. This arbitrary exercise of authority was deemed an abuse of power, and was reprobated both by the magistrates and the people.

It would also seem that the government was not suited to the wishes nor adequate to the protection of the people. The laws were not adapted to the state of society, nor equal to the exigencies of the times, or were badly executed—and the governor and council were incompetent or indisposed to remedy the evils; and there was a great defect in the administration of justice.

Public insecurity produced general discontent; the people became dissatisfied with the existing state of things, and languished for the blessings of good government.

They at length determined to lay their grievances before the governor and council.

On an invitation of the burgomasters of New-Amsterdam, a convention of delegates from several towns met in that city, November 26th, 1653, and adjourned to the 11th of December ensuing, when delegates appeared from the city, Brooklyn, Flatbush, Flatlands, Gravesend, Newtown, Flushing, and Hempstead.

They agreed on a remonstrance to the governor and council on the subject of their grievances, which was well drawn, and expressed in spirited but decent language.

They remonstrated against the exclusion of the people from all share in legislation—against the operation of old and obsolete laws—against withholding grants of land to settlers, and making extravagant grants to particular individuals—against the appointment of magistrates without the



consent of the people, and against the neglect of effectual provision for the defence of the country.

To this the governor and council gave no answer to the deputies, but entered a reply on their minutes, denied the right of some of the towns, particularly Brooklyn, Flatbush, and Flatlands, to send deputies, and protested against the meeting.

In their observations on the remonstrance, the governor and council reflect much on the English as the authors of the public discontent, and particularly on George Baxter, one of the deputies from the town of Gravesend, to whom they evidently impute the draught of the remonstrance.

December 13th, the deputies presented another remonstrance in which they declare, that if they could not obtain redress or protection from the governor and council, they must appeal to their superiors in the Netherlands. This so irritated the governor, that he ordered them to disperse and forbid their assembling again.

At this period, the country seems to have been overrun with robbers, and that there was no adequate authority to redress the evil.

April 7th, 1654, the magistrates of Brooklyn, Flatbush and Flatlands, united in forming a military company against "robbers and pirates," and agreed that there should be a sergeant in each village.

April 8th, 1654, the governor issued a proclamation against certain robbers, who (as he states,) had been banished from New-England, and were wandering about on Long-Island.

In 1654, the governor refused to confirm the election of George Baxter and James Hubbard, who had been chosen magistrates that year for the town of Gravesend.

These two men were among the original patentees of the town, and had been frequently chosen magistrates, and had uniformly enjoyed the confidence of their fellow citizens \*

\* George Baxter had been an ensign, and James Hubbard a sergeant in the British service, and are so named in the charter of Gravesend.—They both seem to have been men of considerable capacity, and were generally entrusted with the management of the public affairs of that town.

Baxter seems to have been a man of talents and education.—In 1642, Governor Kieft, appointed him his English secretary to write his letters, with a salary of 250 guilders a year, in consideration of his talents and knowledge of the English language and of the law.—He was appointed by Governor Stuyvesant himself, one of the commissioners who negotiated the treaty of Hartford, in 1650, by which the boundary between the Dutch and English territories was established.—He was one of the deputies to the convention that met in 1653, to lay the grievances of the country before the governor and council, and it was to him that the governor ascribed the spirited remonstrance which gave him such offence, which probably was the cause of his rejection, and that of his colleague with whom he had long been intimately associated.

Baxter had been educated in the principles of English liberty and could not endure the tyranny of the Dutch governor; his opposition to it made him the victim of his persecution, and it is supposed that he was obliged to leave the colony to escape his resentment.

The rejection or removal of these magistrates, excited so great a ferment in Gravesend, that the Governor thought it necessary to go there to appease it. November 23d, 1654, the governor went to Gravesend, and to effect his purpose, he was obliged to avail himself of the influence of Lady Moody, a connection of Sir Henry Moody, one of the original patentees. He conceded the nomination of the magistrates that year to her; and her popularity reconciled the people to the measure, and produced submission to the arbitrary act of the governor.

November 1st, 1663, the governor, under the apprehension that it was the design of the English to invade the Dutch territories, convened a meeting of the magistrates of most of the Dutch villages at New Amsterdam. The meeting was composed of the magistrates of New-Amsterdam, Rensselaerwick, Beverwick, Harlaem, Bergen, Staten-Island, Flatlands, Flatbush, Brooklyn, Utrecht and Bushwick.

This convention, after hearing what the governor had to communicate, adjourned without doing anything.

The government had become unpopular; the Dutch were disgusted with it, and the English were anxious for a change.

The English towns under the Dutch jurisdiction, had for some time determined to withdraw themselves from the Dutch government. They had held a meeting at Hempstead the preceding winter, and had agreed to put themselves under the jurisdiction of Connecticut; in consequence of which, the general assembly of that colony, March 10th, 1663, appointed two commissioners, "to go to Long-Island, to settle the government on the west end of the Island, according to the agreement at Hempstead, in February last."

In November, 1663, the English embodied at Jamaica, in such force that the governor did not deem it prudent to attempt to disperse them.

The colony continued in this perplexed and unsettled state, till the ensuing year, when the English vessels arrived, and on the 27th August, Old Style, 1664, a treaty was signed, by which the colony of New-Netherland was surrendered to the crown of Great-Britain.

*Of the English Government after the Conquest till the American Revolution.*

- I. Of the government of the Duke of York, and after he had ascended the throne, till the revolution.
- II. Of the revolution in the Colony in 1689.
- III. Of the Colony government after the revolution.

1. By the conquest, the whole of Long-Island was incorporated with the colony of New-York, and became subject to the Duke of York.

The English towns which had been subject to the Dutch, rejoiced that they were freed from their subjection to a government which they disliked, and the other English towns rejoiced that they were relieved from all further apprehensions, from the jealousy and ambition of a foreign power in their neighbourhood.

The eastern towns would have preferred the continuance of their connection with the colony of Connecticut, and reluctantly submitted to its dissolution.

All the English towns, as well those that had been settled under the Dutch, as those that had been connected with Connecticut, flattered themselves with the expectation that they should be admitted to the common privilege of British subjects, of participating in the formation of the laws by which they were to be governed.

It was not long, however, before they discovered that they had been too sanguine in their expectations.

Richard Nicolls, the deputy governor, under the Duke of York, on the first of March, 1665, convened a meeting at Hempstead, of two deputies from every town on the Island, and two from Westchester, for the purpose of organizing the government, of adjusting interfering purchases, and settling the limits of the several towns.\*

At this meeting, it is presumed that Long-Island and Staten-Island, and probably the town of Westchester were erected into a shire, by the name of Yorkshire, which was divided into three ridings.

Staten Island and Newtown, with the several towns in

\* While at this meeting, the deputies signed an address to the Duke of York, full of gratitude and loyalty, which as soon as their constituents found that they were not to have the choice of their own magistrates, nor any share in legislation was severely reprobated, and the deputies were so much censured for putting their signatures to it, that it was deemed necessary to check the spirit of disaffection by authority.—The court of assize, in October 1666, resolved that “whosoever hereafter, shall any ways detract or speak against any of the deputies signing the address to his Royal Highness, at the general meeting at Hempstead, they shall be presented to the next court of sessions, and if the justices shall see cause, they shall from thence be bound over to the assizes, there to answer for the slander upon plaint or information.

Kings county, formed the west riding—the towns of Jamaica, Flushing, Hempstead, Oysterbay, and as is supposed, Westchester, formed the North Riding, and the several towns in Suffolk formed the East Riding.\*

The several towns were recognized, and were required to take out patents from the governor for the lands which they had purchased within their limits.

The governor appointed a high sheriff for the whole shire, and a deputy sheriff or high constable for each riding, and a justice of the peace for each town.

The high sheriff and deputy sheriffs were appointed yearly. The justices of the peace were appointed during pleasure. In 1666, the office of under sheriff or high constable was abolished. In 1683, the office of high sheriff was done away, and a sheriff was ordered to be appointed in each county.

At this meeting the governor promulgated a code of laws, which were principally compiled from the laws of the other English colonies, and which he had caused to be collected and digested for the government of this colony.†

These laws with the alterations and additions made to them from time to time, by the governor and council, continued to be the laws of the colony until October 1683, when the first colony legislature met, and the people were admitted for a short time, to a share in the legislative power.

These laws which are called the Duke's laws, authorized the several towns annually on the first or second day of April, to elect a constable, and at first, eight, and by a subsequent amendment, four overseers, who were the assessors of the town, and with the constable were empowered to make

\* By an order of the governor and court of assize, in 1675, Staten-Island was detached from Long-Island, and permitted "to have a jurisdiction itself," and in 1683, was erected into a separate county. Newtown continued attached to Kings county, until the organization of the counties by the first general assembly, in 1683, when it was made a part of Queens county.

† This code of laws was evidently calculated principally for Yorkshire, comprehending Long-Island, Staten-Island, and probably the town of Westchester. New-York and Albany had some sort of municipal government. Exclusive of these, Long-Island, Staten-Island, and Westchester, contained the chief part of the inhabitants of the colony in 1665. No other county except Richmond, (which was detached from Long-Island in 1675) was organized until 1683. No magistrates attended the court of assize in 1682, north of New-York, but from the towns of Albany and Esopus.

In 1683, an estimate was taken of the property of the inhabitants; and in 1684, a tax of £202 10s. was levied on the colony agreeable to the said estimate; and if property was in proportion to numbers, will furnish some rule by which to estimate the population of the colony at that period. The proportions of the several counties were as follows:

New-York,	£35	Suffolk,	£35
Albany,	27 10	Queens,	25
Ulster,	25	Kings,	25
		Richmond,	15
		Westchester,	15
	87 10		115



regulations respecting matters which concerned the police and good government of the town. The constable and overseers were required annually to appoint two of the overseers to make the rate for building and repairing the church, for the maintenance of the minister, and for the support of the poor.\*

From the overseers, the constable selected the jurors who attended the courts of sessions and assize.

The principal courts established by these laws, were the town court—the court of sessions and the court of assize.

The town court was composed of the constable, and by an amendment of the original law, of two overseers; and had cognizance of all causes of debt and trespass under five pounds, and the justice of the peace was authorized, but not required, to preside in this court.

The court of sessions was established in each riding, and was to be held twice a year. It was composed of the justices of the peace of the several towns in the riding, each of whom was at first allowed £20 a year, which in 1666, was altered into an allowance for their expences.†

This court had jurisdiction of all criminal causes, and of all civil causes over £5, arising in the riding. Causes were tried in this court in civil cases, and in criminal cases not capital, by a jury of seven men, and the verdict was determined by the voice of a majority; but in capital cases the jury consisted of twelve men, and they were required to be unanimous.

The judgment of this court for sums under £20, were final; from such as were for more than that sum, the parties might appeal to the court of assize.

\* From the origin of the colony, each town was required to support its own poor. The money necessary for that purpose, was directed to be raised in each town respectively, by those who, from time to time, adjusted the contingent expenses of the several counties. By the Duke's laws of 1665, the constable and overseers were required to take charge of the poor.

By the act of 1683, the commissioners of each town were required to perform the same service.

By the act of 1691, the assessors and supervisor seem to have been required to perform that duty, and this seems to have been the practice until overseers were authorized to be chosen for this purpose.

In 1747, the several towns in Suffolk were authorized to choose overseers of the poor. Soon after, several other counties were authorized to do the same.

March 5th, 1773.—Every town in the colony was authorized to choose overseers of the poor, and the system, which has ever since prevailed for the support of the poor, was adopted.

† The records of this court, as originally constituted, and as re-organized by the act of 1683, are still to be found in the clerks offices of Kings, Queens and Suffolk. In Kings there is a regular series of them from 1669 to 1711. From these records it appears to have been a common practice for the secretary of the colony, a member of the council, or the high sheriff, to sit and act in Court with the justices. In the record of the Court held at Gravesend, December 13th 1671, Mathias Nicoll, the secretary, is styled president of the Court. This court was held at Gravesend from its origin till 1685, when it was removed to Flatbush by virtue of an act of the colony legislature. There is also in the clerk's office of King's county, copies of most of the acts of the first assembly, passed in 1653 and in 1684, with one or two, which were passed by the second assembly in 1685.

The members of the council, the secretary of the colony, and the high sheriff, were respectively authorized to sit with the justices of the court of sessions, and when either of them was present, he was required to preside. The courts of sessions also took the proof of wills in the respective ridings.\*

The court of assize was composed of the governor, council, and the magistrates of the several towns, and was held once a year in the city of New-York.

This court received, heard and determined appeals from the court of sessions and other inferior tribunals.

Suits for demands above £20 might be commenced in this court on the warrant of the governor: so that it had original as well as appellate jurisdiction, and was a court of equity as well as common law.†

*Of the Tyranny of the Duke's Government.*

The Duke's laws made no provision for a general assembly. The people had no voice in the government.

The governor had unlimited power, executive, legislative and judicial. He was commander-in-chief. All public officers were appointed by him, and most of them held their offices during his pleasure.

The governor also, with the advice of the council, had the exclusive power of legislation, and could make what laws he pleased, and could alter and repeal them when he pleased.

\* By the Duke's laws, the court of sessions in each county took the proof of wills, which was transmitted with the wills to the "office of records" at New-York, and the executors received a copy thereof with a certificate of its being allowed, attested under the seal of the office.

By an act of November 11th, 1692, the power of taking the proof of wills, and of granting letters testamentary and letters of administration, was vested in the governor or a delegate appointed by him. In all the counties except New-York, Orange, Richmond, Kings and Westchester, the proof was permitted to be taken by the courts of common pleas, or by a judge and two justices out of court, and was transmitted to the governor; on which letters testamentary, or of administration, were to be granted by him. It became the practice for the governor to appoint delegates in other counties who took the proof of wills and granted letters testamentary and letters of administration before the revolution.

In 1778, by an act of the legislature of the state, surrogates were ordered to be appointed by the governor and council of appointment in every county, and our present system was established.

† Smith, in his history of New-York, supposes this court was established by Gov. Lovelace. This is a great mistake: It was established by Nicolls in the code he had compiled for the government of the colony, and published in the assembly at Hempstead March 1st, 1665. In the fall of the same year, the three last days in September, and the second, third and fourth days in October, a general court of assize was holden at New-York, composed of Richard Nicolls, the governor, the members of the council, and the justices of the three ridings of Yorkshire, on Long-Island and Staten-Island.

The number of justices who attended this court rendered it a grievance. In the act of 1684, passed for its repeal, it is alledged that it had "become a great charge and expense to the province; and by reason of the great number, not so fit and capable to hear and determine matters and causes of a civil nature, usually brought to the said court;" and it was for that reason abolished.

The last Court of assize held under Sir Edmund Andross, October 6th, 1680, was composed of the governor, five councillors, the mayor of New-York, five aldermen and seventeen justices.

Some of the amendments to the original code, purport to have been made at the court of assize, of which the justices of the several towns formed a part. This was not a legislative but a judicial body, and the power of the justices, with regard to legislation, was probably like that of the parliament of France before the revolution, merely to register the edicts made by the governor and council.

So far as they were permitted to interfere, the indulgence was calculated, if not intended, to lessen the responsibility of the governor, without diminishing his power.

It is certain that their presence or concurrence was not necessary, and that the act imposing duties establishing an excise, and many other important acts, were adopted by the governor in council, and not at the court of assize. The people never considered the justices as their representatives, and censured the acts made at the court of assize, as much as others. The governor presided in the court of assize, which, by appeal, had the control of all inferior tribunals. The judgments and decrees of this court were probably such as the governor dictated ; his assistants not being colleagues, but merely advisers, who held their authority under him and were dependent on him.

In this court the governor united the character of both judge and legislator. He interpreted his own acts, and not only pronounced what the law was, but what it should be.

#### *Of the Public Discontent.*

The people on Long-Island considered some of the laws established by the original code, as arbitrary and oppressive ; and they deemed some that were made by Col. Lovelace, who commenced his administration in May 1667, as still more exceptionable.

They at length resolved to represent their grievances to the governor and council, and to pray for redress.

October 9th, 1669, the towns of Hempstead, Jamaica, Oysterbay, Flushing, Newtown, Gravesend, Westchester and East Chester, severally petitioned for redress.

They enumerated the defects in the existing laws, which they wished to be remedied, stated the provisions which they wished to be adopted—remonstrated against the restrictions which the governor had imposed on trade ; and reprobated, as the greatest of their grievances, the exclusion of the people from any share in legislation.\*

\* In their petitions they refer to the proclamation issued to the people of Long-Island and others, by the commissioners, on their first landing at Gravesend, before the surrender of the

The governor and council received the petitions, granted some of their minor requests, but in the most important cases refused any redress.

The town of Southampton was purchased and settled under the authority of the Earl of Stirling while he held the Island, which circumstance the people of that town supposed exempted them from the necessity of taking out a patent for their lands, from the governor, as was required of other towns by the laws of 1665, and neglected to do it; in consequence of which, the governor and council, at the court of assize, October 8th, 1670, declared the titles to lands in that town invalid, unless a patent was obtained for them within a limited time.

By another act made at the same time, a levy or contribution was ordered to be made in the several towns on Long-Island, to repair the fort at New-York.\*

colony promising that they "should enjoy all such privileges as his majesty's other subjects in America enjoyed," the most important of which they alledge, is a participation in the power of making the laws by which they were to be governed, "by such deputies as shall be yearly chosen by the freeholders of every town and parish," and they claimed a fulfilment of that promise.

They also complain of it as a grievance, that any acts should be made by the governor under pretence of his secret instructions, and pray "to be informed what is required of them by virtue of the commission granted by his Royal Highness the Duke of York."

\* The charges of the several towns and counties under the Duke of York, were defrayed by a direct tax on the persons and estates real and personal of the inhabitants, according to an estimate made by the constable and overseers of the several towns, in conformity with certain rules prescribed by law. The rate for the public or county charge in each riding was fixed by the governor and council, by the amount of its estimate. A penny in the pound, was usually sufficient for the purpose. The tax was collected by the constables, and paid over to such persons in the several towns as were entitled to it on the warrant of the high sheriff. The town charges were fixed by the constable and overseers, and levied by the same estimate. Governor Lovelace, in 1670, and Governor Dungan in 1686 or '87, both attempted to raise money for colony purposes, by their own authority, but the attempt met with so much opposition, that it could not be carried into effect.

The colony charges were paid out of the monies arising from duties imposed by the governor and council, on exports and imports. In the fall of 1684, Governor Nicolls established a tariff of duties on goods exported to the Netherlands; and shortly after, on other goods, exported and imported.

August 6th, 1669, Governor Lovelace imposed an excise on wines, which was soon after extended to other liquors.

October 18th, 1669, he imposed a duty of two guilders on every hogshead of tobacco exported, payable in wampum,  $1\frac{1}{2}$  per cent. ad valorem on beaver; and on all other goods exported  $1\frac{1}{2}$  per cent. ad valorem.

May 31st 1675.—It was ordered that goods from Barbadoes, Jamaica, and the Caribbee Islands, should be imported duty free, except rum and exportable articles. These duties, with the fees of patents and other fees of office, yielded a revenue adequate to the ordinary support of the executive government.

The imposition of duties by the governor without the consent of the people, was deemed a grievance; and was complained of by the people of Jamaica in their remonstrance of December 9th, 1670, against the imposition of a direct tax for the reparation of the fort by the same authority; and also by the people of Southamptoo, in their remonstrance of February 15th, 1671, against the order requiring them to take out a new patent.

In 1683, the first colonial assembly repealed the Duke's law relative to rates, and passed a new act for defraying the charges of each respective city, town and county, throughout the colony, and for maintaining the poor.

By this the assessment was to be made by a certain number of commissioners, who were to be chosen by the town. The amount of the tax for the public expenses was to be fixed by a committee composed of a commissioner from each town. The taxes were to be collected by the constables of the several towns, and paid to a treasurer appointed by the commissioners, who was to pay the same over to those whose accounts had been allowed, on the warrant of the commissioners.

May 13th, 1691.—The first assembly, after the revolution, passed an act authorizing each



The English colonists on Long-Island brought with them the doctrine that taxation and representation were inseparable—that the power of disposing of his own money, was the birthright of every British subject, and one of the elementary principles of British liberty, and that taxes could

town to choose two assessors and a freeholder. The estimate was to be made by the assessors, and the public charge of the county was to be adjusted by the said freeholders of the several towns. They were to choose a treasurer, to whom the taxes were to be paid by the constables, who were to collect the same—and the treasurer was to pay them over in their order.

By an act of October 18th, 1701, each town was authorized to choose two assessors and a collector. The public charges of the county were to be adjusted by the justices, at the court of sessions, who were to appoint the treasurer, to whom the collector was to pay the taxes, and who was to pay the accounts that were allowed by the justices.

By an act of March 7th, 1703, each town was to choose two assessors, a collector and a supervisor. The supervisors were to adjust the public expences, and appoint a county treasurer, to whom the collector was to pay the taxes, and who was to pay over the same to the public creditors, on the warrant of the supervisors.

This act has continued with little variation till the present time. The first assembly in 1653, also passed an act for defraying the requisite charges of the government. By this act they new modelled the former tariff. They imposed duties on various goods exported and imported. They imposed a duty of ten per cent. on goods imported for the Indian trade; and seem to have contemplated relying wholly on this source of revenue for the ordinary support of government.

Similar acts were passed from time to time; and the government in time of peace, during the colony administration, was generally supported by the revenue derived from duties and the excise.

In time of war, which occurred very frequently, the colony assemblies had recourse to other taxes, but principally to direct taxes and emissions of paper money, redeemable by direct taxes.

October 2d, 1690, the assembly under Leisler, levied a direct tax of three pence in the pound to defray the expenses of the troops raised to go against Montreal.

In 1706, the colonial legislature emitted £5000 in paper money, to be redeemed in a given time, which practice was often repeated during the colonial government.

The practice was on issuing a given sum in paper, to provide for raising the same sum, payable by instalments, by a direct tax, so as to extinguish the debt in a given period. On the collection of every instalment, it was exchanged for the same amount of paper, which was destroyed.

In 1755, the colonial legislature emitted £63,000—in 1756, £62,000—in 1758, £100,000—in 1759, £100,000—and in 1760, £60,000, in paper money for the support of their troops employed in the French war: Other colonies did the like, nor could the war have been supported without that resource.

In 1759, the colony legislature, on the application of Sir Jeffery Amherst, issued £150,000 in paper money, and loaned it to the General for the purpose of forwarding the public service, which was shortly afterwards redeemed in specie by the British government.

It appears from the report to the assembly in 1766, that the various sums of paper money issued by the colony of New-York, from 1714 to 1760, both inclusive, amounted to £611,607, of which sum, on the 1st of November 1763, £468,700 0. 6d. had been redeemed, and £122,906 10s. 6d. remained in circulation.

In 1737, the colonial legislature issued £40,000 in paper, apportioned it among the several counties, and loaned it to the people on landed security at an interest of five per cent., payable annually, with a provision for the re-payment of the principal by four instalments of one-fourth each in 1747, '48, '49 and '50, which when paid in was destroyed.

In 1771 the colony legislature issued £120,000 in paper, and loaned it to relieve the wants of the people.

In times when money was scarce, it was usual to resort to loans of paper money to supply the deficiency of the circulating medium, and to relieve the necessities of the inhabitants. The money was lent on ample security in lands, which were daily increasing in value. The certainty of its redemption prevented its depreciation. The interest increased the public revenue, and the circulation of the money invigorated the industry, accelerated the improvement, and augmented the wealth and prosperity of the colony.

In 1760, the revenue of the colony appears, from the treasurer's report to the assembly, to have been derived from the following sources:

Duties on tonnage, - - - - -	£ 2,040
On wine, rum, brandy, cocoa, negroes, and dry goods, imported from the } British Islands, - - - - -	32,643
Direct tax, and monies derived from loans, - - - - -	33,836
The excise, - - - - -	3,700
An emission of paper money, - - - - -	60,000
	<hr/>
	£132 279

only be imposed with the consent of the people, by their representatives in a general assembly.

They had for some years paid a direct tax of a penny in the pound to defray the public charges of the several towns and counties, of which they had not complained.

The governor had also imposed duties on goods imported and exported according to his pleasure for the support of government, and was now attempting to raise money by a direct tax for other purposes without the consent of the people.

Several of the towns were alarmed at the precedent about to be established, as dangerous to their liberties, and determined to resist it.

The towns of South Old, South Hampton, and East Hampton, in a joint meeting by their delegates at South Old, agreed to contribute to the repairing of the fort, "if they might have the privileges that other of his majesty's subjects in these parts have and do enjoy"—alluding to the governments of New-England.

June 24th, 1672.—The town of East Hampton, to whom the proceedings of the delegates were communicated, approved of the decision of the deputies, and agreed to comply with the order "if the privileges may be obtained, but not otherwise." The towns of Huntington, Flushing, Hempstead and Jamaica, by the votes of their respective town meetings, refused to comply with the order, and communicated the reasons of their refusal in writing to their respective constables and overseers to whom the order was sent.

The people of Huntington assigned this among other reasons for their refusal, viz. : "because they were deprived of the liberties of Englishmen"—intimating that they deemed it a violation of their constitutional rights, that their money should be taken from them without their consent by their representatives in general assembly.

The people of Jamaica, in justification of their refusal, stated that they considered themselves already sufficiently burdened, by the enhanced price which they paid for their goods, in consequence of the duties which the governor had imposed on them, in addition to a penny in the pound, which they paid towards the public charges. That a compliance with the order would be contrary to the King's instructions, which forbid any law to be enforced on the country that was contrary to the laws of the nation—meaning that no law for taking the money out of their pockets

without their consent by their representatives, was consistent with the British constitution. "That on the same principle that this order was imposed they might be required to maintain the garrison, and whatever else we know not, till there be no end; but if it may appear to us that it is the King's absolute order to impose the said burdens, and dis-privilege us, contrary to his former good intentions and instructions, and contrary to the liberties his majesty's subjects enjoy in all his territories and dominions, we shall, with patience, rest under the said burdens until address be made to the king for relief."

The votes of Flushing and Hempstead have not been discovered, but there is no doubt they were to the like effect. The constables of Flushing, Hempstead, and Jamaica, laid the resolutions of their respective towns before the ensuing court of sessions of the north riding, held at Jamaica; but it seems that the court did not act on them. They then laid them before the court of sessions of the west riding, which met the next week, December 21st, 1670, at Gravesend. That court, under the influence of the secretary of the colony who presided, and a member of the council, after examining the writings containing the proceedings of the said towns, adjudged "That the said papers were in themselves scandalous, illegal, and seditious, tending only to disaffect all the peaceable and well-meaning subjects of his majesty in these his royal highness' territories and dominions." And the court further ordered "that the said papers should be presented to the governor in council, for them to proceed on as they shall conceive will best tend to the suppression of false suggestions and jealousies in the minds of peaceable and well-meaning subjects in alienating them from their duty and obedience to the laws."

Agreeably to this illegal order, the papers were presented to Governor Lovelace, and were by him and his council adjudged to the flames, and ordered to be publicly burnt before the town house of the city, at the next mayor's court to be held there.\*

#### *Of the Reconquest of the Colony by the Dutch.*

During the war between the English and the Dutch, which continued from 1672 to February 1674, the Dutch attempted to recover their authority in this country. For

\* It was this sage and humane Goveroor Lovelace who, as Smith in his history of New-Jersey informs us, in 1668 wrote to Sir Robert Carr, who was then in authority there, that the best method to keep the people in order was "to lay such taxes on them as may not give them liberty to entertain any other thoughts but how to discharge them."

this purpose they sent a small squadron with troops to retake New-York.

They arrived July 30th, 1673, and the commandant of the fort most cowardly surrendered it to them without firing a gun or making any kind of defence.

The commanders of the squadron appointed Captain Anthony Colve to be governor of the colony, who immediately set about reinstating the Dutch government.

August 14, 1673, he issued a proclamation to the several towns on Long-Island, requiring each of them to send two deputies to New-York, with full powers to make their submission to the states general and the prince of Orange on behalf of the town.

The Dutch towns, and the English towns that were settled under the Dutch, submitted to the new government. The English towns seem at first to have paid some attention to the proposals of the governor, but soon declined them.

October 1st, 1673, the Dutch governor sent William Knyff and Anthony Malypart to the English towns, requiring them to take the oath of allegiance. Oysterbay complied; Huntington and Brookhaven offered to sign an agreement to be faithful to the Dutch government, but refused to take any oath that would bind them to take up arms against the crown of Great-Britain.

The three eastern towns declined any compromise, and sent deputies to Connecticut to solicit that colony to take them under her jurisdiction, and to furnish them with aid against the Dutch, if they should attempt to enforce their demands.

October 9th, 1673, the general court referred their application to a committee consisting of the governor, assistants, and two others, and authorized them, with the concurrence of Massachusetts and Plymouth, to grant their request, and to do what should be most advantageous to the mutual benefit of the parties.

The committee agreed to take them under their jurisdiction—erected the three towns into a county, established a county court, appointed judges and such other civil and military officers as they deemed necessary, and sent a military force to their aid.

October 25th, the governor sent William Knyff and Nicholas Voss to the towns of Huntington and Brookhaven; and, to induce them to comply with his wishes, promised them liberty of conscience, security of property, the choice



of their officers, in the same manner as the like privilege had been enjoyed by the Dutch, with the same share in the government as the Dutch, and also consented that the oath of allegiance should be so modified as to accommodate their scruples.

Huntington and Brookhaven consented to yield to the wishes of the governor, on condition that none but the magistrates should take the oath required of them. This was conceded, and those two towns submitted on those terms.

October 30th, the Dutch governor sent Cornelius Steenwyck, first councillor, and two others, to the eastern towns, to persuade them to comply with the same terms.

They sailed down the sound and called at Shelter-Island, where they fell in with Samuel Wyllis and Captain Winthrop, who had been sent to the Island, by Connecticut, to carry their resolutions into effect. The Dutch commissioners visited Southold, and found the people assembled and in arms. They offered to take their submission in writing, and to accept of the oath of allegiance from the magistrates. The people of that town, however, refused all manner of submission, and the commissioners returned without effecting the object of their mission.

In the mean time, the governor of Connecticut wrote to the Dutch governor, and remonstrated against his attempting to extend his jurisdiction over the English towns that never had been subject to the Dutch government. This produced a captions correspondence between the two governors.

The Dutch governor undertook to reduce the eastern towns by force, and Connecticut assisted them to repel his attempts. The Dutch forces sailed down the sound towards the east end of the Island, and attempted several descents, but effected nothing except the collection of a sum of money of Nathaniel Sylvester of Shelter-Island, for the property of his brother Constant Sylvester, and Thomas Middleton, which the Dutch governor had illegally confiscated and sold to him.\*

November 26th, 1673, Connecticut, in conjunction with her confederates, declared war against the Dutch, and made preparations to commence hostile operations in the spring.

\* Trumbull, in his history of Connecticut, states that the Dutch threatened the eastern towns with destruction by fire and sword, unless they would submit and swear allegiance to the states general; that they sent ships and an armed force towards the east end of the Island, and made several descents; but that, by assistance of the troops which had been sent by Connecticut, they were in all instances repulsed and driven from the Island.

October 14th, 1675, the general court of Connecticut returned Major Treat public thanks for his good conduct in defending the colony and the towns on Long-Island against the Dutch, and for his subsequent services.

The Dutch governor seems to have been alarmed at these preparations. March 27th, 1674, he ordered all vessels to be removed to a particular place, lest they should hinder the defence of the city, and made provision for the transportation of the inhabitants of the neighbouring villages "in case of an attack."

Peace was concluded in Europe February 9th, 1674, and the news of it suspended hostilities, although no official account of it was received till several months afterwards.

By the treaty, all conquests were to be restored to their former owners; but, no person being sent to receive the surrender of the colony, the British government was not re-instated until the ensuing fall.

The people of Southold, Southampton, and Easthampton, dreaded the prospect of a return to the duke's government, and determined to use their utmost efforts to resist it. They accordingly chose delegates and sent them to Connecticut, to solicit their continuance under the protection and government of that colony.

May 14th, 1674, the general court took their application into consideration, and consented that they should continue in association with that colony, with the same privileges as other towns, as far as was in their power to make the grant.

The general court also appointed or re-appointed Captain John Youngs, Captain John Howel, and Mr. John Mulford, judges of the county court, and appointed Samuel Wyllis, John Talcott, and the secretary, or any two of them, to go over to the Island to order and settle the affairs of the people there, and to establish such military officers among them as they should judge necessary.

June 13, 1674, the town of Easthampton appointed a committee who were ordered, in conjunction with Southampton and Southold, to petition the king to suffer them to continue under the jurisdiction of Connecticut.

These towns continued attached to Connecticut when the colony was restored to the duke of York.

#### *Of the restoration of the Duke's Government.*

After the conclusion of peace June 29th, 1674, the duke of York, to remove all doubt respecting his title, obtained a new patent for the territories which had been granted to him, by the patent of March 12th, 1664, and shortly after appointed Major, afterwards Sir Edmund Andross, governor of his territories in America.

October 31st, 1674, Sir Edmund arrived at New York received the surrender of the colony from the Dutch authorities and reinstated the duke's former system of government. Sir Edmund immediately sent to the three eastern towns, requiring them to return to the government of the duke of York.

The deputies of the three towns sent a memorial to the governor, in which they state "that, by the aid furnished them by the kindness of Connecticut, they had repelled the Dutch; that they had joined them and come under that government; that that government had appointed both their civil and military officers; that they had become bound by oath to that colony, and could not dissolve the connexion without their approbation."

November 17th, the people of Southold, by a vote of their town-meeting, declared themselves "to be under the government of his majesty's colony of Connecticut, and that they would use all lawful means so to continue."

The town of Easthampton instructed their deputies, who were appointed to consult with those of the other towns, what course they should take "to see that all lawful endeavours be put forth to the utmost for our continuance under that government."

November 18, 1674, the governor and council ordered that a messenger be again sent to the three towns, requiring them to restore the former overseers and constables to their places, "under the penalty of being declared rebels;" and ordered the three deputies who signed the memorial on behalf of the respective towns, to wit John Mulford, John Howell, and John Youngs, to appear and answer before the council, on the like penalty.

Thus the endeavours of the eastern towns to continue under the jurisdiction of Connecticut were unavailing, and they were obliged, however reluctantly, to return to the government of the duke of York.

Sir Edmund pursued the same arbitrary course that his predecessor had done.

November 26, 1674, he suspended a term of the court of sessions in the east riding of Yorkshire, and ordered the towns of Huntington and Brookhaven to have their business for the term transacted at the ensuing court of sessions at Jamaica in the north riding, because the three eastern towns had not returned the accounts of the constables and overseers of those towns according to his orders.

In April, 1681, the same governor arbitrarily summoned Isaac Platt, Epenetus Platt, Samuel Titus, Jonas Wood, and Thomas Wicks, inhabitants of Huntington, to New York, and caused them to be imprisoned without trial and without being chargeable with any legal offence, but as is supposed merely for having attended a meeting of delegates of the several towns for the purpose of contriving the means of procuring a redress of grievances. Sir Edmund seems shortly after to have left the colony. June 29, 1681, Anthony Brockholst presided in the court of assize as commander in chief.

*Of the first Colony Assembly.*

June 29, 1681, the grand jury, at a special court of assize, in which Anthony Brockholst presided, presented the want of a general assembly, as a grievance, and the court appointed Captain John Youngs, the high sheriff of Yorkshire, to draw a petition, to be sent to the duke of York, for the privilege; which he did, and it was signed by the clerk, by order of the court, and forwarded to his royal highness, who seems to have listened to the prayer of the petition, and instructed the new governor to summon a general assembly as soon as he arrived in the colony.

Col. Thomas Dongan, the new governor, arrived August 27th, 1683, and soon after issued orders to the high sheriff to summon the freeholders of the several ridings to meet, to choose representatives to meet him in assembly the 17th of October ensuing.

This first assembly met according to the summons, in New-York, October 17th, 1683, and elected Matthias Nichols, one of the representatives from New York, their speaker.

The assembly, at their first session, adopted a bill of rights, established courts of justice,\* repealed some of the most ob-

\* By the act of October 29th, 1683, a court was established in every town, for the trial of causes of debt and trespass under 40s., to be holden the first Wednesday of every month, by three persons commissioned for that purpose, without a jury unless demanded by one of the parties, and then to be granted at the expense of the party demanding it.

By an act of 1684, the commissioners were to be chosen by the several towns, and the court might be holden by any two of them.

By an act of November 4th, 1685, the jurisdiction of the court was raised to £5.

By an act of May 6th, 1691, the power of holding this court was vested in the justices of the peace. The justice of each town, on the hearing of a cause, was required to take to his assistance a freeholder of the town, and the jurisdiction of the court was restricted to 40s., with a jury at the expense of the party requiring it.

By the ordinance of May 15th, 1699, every justice of the peace was authorized, with the assistance of a freeholder of the town, to hear, try and determine, all causes of debt and trespass, to the value of 40s. and under, without a jury.

By an act of December 16th, 1731, the same jurisdiction was given the justices of the peace of the several towns, without the assistance of a freeholder.

By an act of December 16th, 1758, the jurisdiction of the justices was extended to causes of the value of £5 and under, which, by an act of December 20th, 1763, was continued to January 1st, 1770.



noxious of the duke's laws, altered and amended others, and passed such new laws as they judged that the circumstances of the colony required.

This assembly had another session in October, 1684. At that session they abolished the court of assize, made further alterations in the duke's laws, and enacted several new ones.

A new assembly was summoned in September, 1685, and met at New-York the ensuing October, and chose William Pinhorne their speaker. This assembly passed several acts, among which were the two following, to wit: An act, passed

An act of May 10th, 1769, extended the jurisdiction of this court to cases of the value of £10 and under, which was disallowed by the king, December 9th, 1770, and published here March 4th, 1771, which revived the act of 1737.

March 12th, 1772, an act was passed, extending the jurisdiction of this court to £5, which continued till the revolution.

*Of Court of Sessions and Common Pleas.*

By the act of October 29th, 1683, a court called a court of sessions, was established, to be held yearly in every county by the justices of the peace of the said county, or any three or more of them, for the trial of all causes, civil and criminal, arising in the county, by the verdict of twelve men; the court to continue only three days.

In 1688, it would seem, by the event, that an ordinance must have been passed for separating the civil from the criminal jurisdiction of this court, or by which a court of common pleas was organized differently from the sessions.

August 25th, 1688, Sir Edmund Andross issued distinct commissions for the court of common pleas, and general sessions of the peace, in Kings and Queens, which commissions are on record in those counties.

The commission for Kings county appoints Stephen Van Cortland judge of the court of common pleas; and the court which was held April 2d, 1689, is called a court of sessions and common pleas, from which circumstance it seems probable that the common pleas was held immediately after the sessions, and that the act of 1691 adopted this arrangement.

By the act of May 6th, 1691, the courts of common pleas and sessions were distinctly organized. The court of common pleas was to be holden by a judge and three justices, to be assigned for that purpose, three of whom to form a quorum, with power to hear and determine all causes arising in the county, tryable at the common law, and whose decision should be final in all cases under £20, except in cases where the title of land was in question.

The court of sessions was to be holden by the justices of the peace in Kings, the second Tuesday of May and September, at Flatbush; in Queens, the third Tuesday of May and September, at Jamaica; and in Suffolk, the last Tuesday in March at Southampton, and the last Tuesday in September at Southold: to continue only two days. The court of common pleas was to be opened immediately after the determination of the sessions, and to continue only two days.

The act of May 6th, 1691, was limited to two years, and was from time to time extended to May 6th, 1699. April 11th, 1699, the house of representatives passed a bill for a further extension of the same act, and sent it to the governor and council for their assent. The governor, however, determined to exercise the prerogative vested in him by his commission, of establishing courts of justice himself, with the advice and consent of his council; and they passed the ordinance of May 15th, 1699, and all our courts after this period, except the justices' court, were regulated by the ordinances of the governor and his privy council during the colony administration.

By the ordinance of May 15th, 1699, the same arrangement of the courts was adopted, with the exception that no restriction was imposed on the number of the judges of the court of common pleas; and the second term in Kings was altered to the second Tuesday in November.

May 18th, 1710, two judges attended the court of common pleas in Queens, and shortly after there were three in all the counties.

By an ordinance, July 10th, 1729, the court of common pleas and general sessions were combined; were to be opened at the same time, or one immediately after the other, so that the business of one or the other as it occurred might be constantly proceeded in, which arrangement continued, without any material alteration except in the times of holding the courts in the several counties, until the revolution.

*Of the Supreme Court.*

By the act of October 29th, 1683, a court of general jurisdiction was established, called a court of oyer and terminer and general gaol delivery, with power to remove all causes and judgments over £5 from inferior courts, and to examine, correct or reverse, the same; to be

November 4th, 1685, for regulating the proceedings of monthly courts throughout the province, by which the jurisdiction of the court was extended to £5; and an act, passed November 7th, 1685, for removing the court of sessions of Kings county from Gravesend to Flatbush.

There is no evidence that this assembly ever met again, or that any other was summoned, except one by Leisler, during his exercise of supreme power, until the arrival of a governor under William and Mary in 1691.

Charles II. died February 6th, 1685, and the duke of York succeeded him by the title of James II; and, as he

held by a judge and four justices of the peace, to be commissioned for that purpose in each respective county once in every year. Either by a law or an ordinance in 1684, two judges were appointed to hold this court.

By an act, passed in 1684, £202 10s. was raised for the payment of the salaries of the judges of this court.

In 1685 Matthias Nichols and John Palmer presided in this court in Queens county.

By the act of May 6th, 1691, a supreme court was established, to consist of a chief justice and four judges, two of whom with the chief justice to form a quorum, with cognizance of all cases, civil, criminal and mixed, as fully and amply as the courts of king's bench, common pleas and exchequer, within their majesties' kingdom of England, have or ought to have; to be held at the city hall of the city of New-York, on the first Tuesday of April and October, neither term to continue longer than eight days, with power also, by writ of certiorari or otherwise, to correct the decisions of inferior courts.

By an act of 1692, the judges were required to hold a circuit once a year in each county in the colony. In a short time the number of judges was reduced to three.

By the ordinance of May 15th, 1699, the same arrangement of the supreme court and circuits was adopted, as was established by the acts of 1691 and '92, except that the terms were limited to five days; and the times of holding the circuits, and courts of oyer and terminer, were fixed.

By an ordinance of April 3d, 1704, the supreme court was required to hold four terms, which were to commence respectively on the first Tuesdays of June and September, and on the second Tuesdays of March and October; and to continue five days each.

By an ordinance, April 15th, 1715, the September term was changed, and the terms were to commence the first Tuesday in June and the last Tuesday in November, and the second Tuesdays of March and October; each to continue five days.

By an ordinance of March 19th, 1732, the terms were ordered to commence on the third Tuesdays of January, April and October, and on the last Tuesday of July.

By an ordinance, August 6th, 1750, it was ordered that the January and July terms continue till Saturday of the same week; and that the April and October terms continue till the end of Thursday in the second week.

By an ordinance of October 7th, 1761, it was ordered that the January and July terms continue, as before, to the end of Saturday of the same week; and that the April and October terms should continue till Saturday of the second week. One or more of the judges was directed to hold a circuit in each county, to try all causes brought to issue in the supreme court; and the court might give judgment in the next or any subsequent term, to be holden for any time not exceeding six days; the time of holding the circuit courts to be fixed by rule at the term next preceding.

This arrangement of the supreme court continued till the revolution, and was recognized by the constitution.

#### *Of the Court of Chancery.*

By the act of November 29th, 1683, the governor and council were constituted a court of chancery, with an appeal to the king. The governor was authorized to appoint a deputy and other officers.

By the act of May 6th, 1691, the same arrangement was adopted.

By the ordinance of September 2d, 1701, the powers of chancellor were vested in the governor and council, or any two of that board. Commissions were issued, appointing masters, clerks, and a register; and the court was to sit the first Thursday in every month.

A court of admiralty was very early established in the colony, consisting of a judge, register and marshal. In 1701, William Atwood was appointed chief justice and judge of the admiralty at the same time. It had jurisdiction of all maritime causes, and the proceedings were according to the civil law.

The former acts and ordinances, regulating the fees of the different courts, having expired, the subject was adjusted by an ordinance of April 15th, 1768.

determined to have as little to do with parliaments as possible, so it is probable that he revoked the power which he had given to his governors to call assemblies, and determined that they should rule the colony by his instructions alone, without admitting the people to any participation in the public councils.

During the reign of James II., the rights of the people, civil and religious, were sacrificed in the claims of the prerogative and the bigotry of the king. His governors resembled their master in their religious and political principles, and seem to have studied to imitate him in their contempt of the rights of the people.

In 1686 or '87, Governor Dongan, with his council, passed an act for levying a tax of a half penny in the pound for colony expenses. This was so flagrant a violation of the principles held inviolable by the people of Long-Island, that it is not believed that the law was ever executed.

November 18th, 1686, Governor Dongan issued a warrant to a messenger, to have Mr. James, the minister of East-hampton, before the council that day fortnight, to answer for a sermon which he had preached the 17th of the preceding month, in which he had uttered sentiments which did not suit the governor or his friends.

The governor, with the advice of the council, had the disposition of the public lands. No purchase could be made without his license, and no purchase was of any avail unless confirmed by patent, and for these they charged such sums as their avarice dictated.

The fees of patents constituted the principal perquisites of the governor, and the quit-rents charged on them produced no inconsiderable revenue to the crown. The interest which the governor had in these operated as an inducement to multiply the number of patents, and to enlarge the quit-rents as much as possible.

In 1685, the governor issued a patent for lands in the town of Huntington, which in 1675 had been adjudged by the court of assize to be within the limits of the original patent of that town.

In 1686, he ordered the people of that town to purchase the lands within the town which had not been purchased of the Indians, in order that they might be compelled to take out new patents for them.

The original patent of Huntington was made subject to such quit-rent as should be afterwards fixed, and the amount

which that should be became a subject of altercation between the people of that town and the governor. To compel them to consent to its being fixed agreeable to his wishes, Governor Dongan, in 1686, seized their patent, and before he would consent to grant a confirmation of it, they were obliged to agree to raise £29 4s. 7d. in satisfaction of their quit-rent, and for the expense of a new patent, in which the quit-rent was fixed, which passed the council August 2d, 1688, and was one of the last acts of his administration.

In 1686, Governor Dongan ordered the same lands to be surveyed in East Hampton, in order to dispose of them to certain persons to whom the town had refused to grant lands. Some of the people published a protest against this proceeding, and on 18th October, 1686, he issued his warrant to a messenger, to have Samuel Mulford, Robert Dayton, Samuel Parsons, Benjamin Conklin, Thomas Osborn, and John Osborn, before the council that day fortnight, to answer the premises.

Most of the towns on the Island, not excepting those settled under the Dutch, whose lands were secured by the treaty of surrender, were induced by one pretext or another to take out new patents; and in cases where the quit-rent had been fixed in the original patent, it was usually enlarged in the subsequent one.

The extravagance of the patent fees continued to be a subject of complaint during the colony government. The expense of the last patent of Huntington, which was obtained at a subsequent period, amounted to £56 18s. 3d., of which sum £50 was paid to the governor and public officers.

## II.—*Of the Revolution of 1689.*

The arbitrary measures of the Governors of James II., the denial of general assemblies, and the appointment of Catholics to office, alarmed the people for the safety of both their liberties and religion, disgusted them with the government, and prepared them to welcome the revolution in favour of William and Mary, which promised a new era in favour of civil and religious liberty, and which terminated in the fall of 1688 in the expulsion of James II. from the throne, and forever put an end to his authority.

The friends of despotic power in England had long considered that the charters of the New-England colonies



granted too much liberty to the people ; and it had been for some time the intention of the crown to revoke them and make them royal governments.

Charles II., in his life time, had made some efforts for this purpose in relation to Massachusetts ; and James II., as soon as he ascended the throne, determined to carry this purpose into effect.

In accordance with this determination, in 1686 the charters of the New England colonies were revoked or suspended, and Sir Edmund Andross was appointed governor of New-England.

In the spring of 1688, New-York was added to his government. July 28th, 1688, an order of the king was read in the council of New-York, directing Col. Dongan, the governor, to deliver the seal of the province to Sir Edmund Andross. He shortly after visited New-York and assumed the government.

August 25th, he issued new commissions to the civil officers of Kings and Queens counties.

On his return to Boston, the affairs of New-York were conducted by Nicholson, the lieutenant governor, and council.

It is supposed that Col. Dongan immediately retired to his farm as a private citizen, where he remained until the spring of 1690 or longer, before he left the country.

The news of the accession of William and Mary to the throne reached Boston in April 1689, and the people immediately rose, seized the governor, whose tyranny had become intolerable, and imprisoned him, where they determined to detain him till they could hear from England.

The news of the proceedings in Boston prompted certain persons in New-York, whose zeal or ambition was too impatient of delay to await the changes which would necessarily have succeeded the revolution in England, to wrest the government out of the hands of Nicholson, the lieutenant governor.

May 31st, Capt. Jacob Leisler put himself at the head of the party, seized the fort and kept possession of it. June 3d, he was joined by the other captains of the militia, with their companies. They immediately issued a proclamation, stating that their intention in seizing the fort was to keep it for king William, and that they would surrender it to the governor who should be appointed by him. Nicholson immediately retired aboard a vessel, and returned to England.

June 12th, Leisler and his friends wrote to the several towns on Long-Island, inviting them to send two men from each county to meet the deputies of the other counties at New-York, on the 26th instant, to form a committee of safety, and also to send two men from each town to assist in guarding the fort.

It is supposed that Kings and Queens complied with the request, although there was a powerful opposition in Queens to the measure.

The several towns in Suffolk met by their deputies at Southampton, June 20th, where a majority of them refused to send deputies to New-York, and immediately opened a negotiation with Connecticut, and made another unsuccessful effort to put themselves under the jurisdiction of that colony, the laws and institutions of which were more congenial with their ideas of good government than those of any royal province.

The counties of Albany and Ulster also refused to co-operate with Leisler, or to send deputies to the general meeting.

Most or all of the other counties, it is supposed, sent their deputies to New-York.

The committee of safety, which met at New-York, June 26th, 1689, gave Leisler the superintendence of things, and he managed the public affairs according to their advice till the ensuing fall.

In December, letters were received from England, directed to "Francis Nicholson, or in his absence to such as for the time being take care for preserving the peace and administering the laws in their majesty's province of New-York, in America," and authorizing Nicholson "to take upon him the chief command, and to appoint for his assistance as many of the principal freeholders and inhabitants as he should think fit."

Leisler chose to consider these letters, in the absence of Nicholson, as addressed to himself, and immediately assumed the title and power of lieutenant governor. He selected a council, appointed public officers in the several counties, and commissioned them in his own name, and demanded an entire submission to his authority.

He demanded the possession of the fort at Albany from the magistrates, who vowed their intention to keep it for king William, and were as zealous for the revolution as himself, and quite as disinterested. He exerted the patron-

age of his station to reconcile those parts of the colony that were disaffected with his authority, before he proceeded to enforce it.

While Leisler was thus engaged in contriving means to secure his power, the defence of the colony was neglected, in consequence of which the town of Schenectady, February the 8th, 1690, fell a sacrifice to the barbarity of the French and Indians.

In the spring of 1690, Leisler wrested the fort at Albany out of the hands of the magistrates, and confiscated the property of such as had opposed his having the fort, and had fled from the province to escape his resentment, and he imprisoned others, who questioned the legality of his authority, or the propriety of his measures.

He summoned a general assembly in the spring of 1690, probably to procure supplies for the protection of the frontiers, which met in New-York the 24th of April, and chose John Spratt their speaker. It is not known that any thing was done at this meeting.

They were soon prorogued to the first of September. No members attended from Suffolk, Albany and Ulster; and one from New-York, and one from Queens, refused to serve; so that it could not have consisted of more than eight or nine members.

May 1st, 1690, an enterprise was concerted with Leisler, by the New-England colonies, against Montreal, in co-operation with an expedition, to be conducted at the same time by water, by the eastern colonies, against Quebec. The number of troops agreed on was 850, of which 400 were to be furnished by New-York.

The enterprise was defeated by Leisler's neglect\*, or the neglect of those under him, to make provision for the support of the troops, and for their transportation across the lakes.

During this period the towns in Suffolk county had several meetings to consult about the course which it would be

\* The troops were commanded by Major General John Winthrop, esquire, who, when he approached the lakes, found there were neither boats sufficient to carry them, nor provisions to support them; and was obliged to retreat to Albany to subsist the army.

The blame fell on Major Milbourn, who was the commissary, which threw Leisler into such a rage, that he caused the general to be arrested and imprisoned. This produced a severe rebuke from the governor and council of Connecticut. They say, in their letter to Leisler, "You necessitate us to tell you that a prison is not a catholicon for all state maladies, though so much used by you;" and threaten, if he did not abandon his violent proceedings, that they would leave him and New-York to themselves, let the consequences be what they might; and add, "If your adherence to Mr. Milbourn (whose spirit we have sufficient testimony of,) and other emulators of the major's honour, be greater than to ourselves and the gentlemen of the Bay, you may boast of the exchange by what profit you find."

TRUMBULL'S APPENDIX.

proper for them to pursue, without coming to any agreement. The summons to choose assemblymen was received March 15th, 1690, which they refused to obey.

The people of Huntington, in April, 1690, signified their willingness to recognize the authority of Leisler.

The people of Easthampton came to a resolution, the third of May, that they would not submit to Leisler, but would continue as they were. This town consented, however, September 9th, 1690, that certain moneys which they had formerly raised for public use, and which had not been paid to the government, should be paid to Leisler, or to his order.

The county sent no members to the assembly, and does not seem to have been reconciled to Leisler's authority; but continued in a divided and neutral condition during his administration.

The opposition in Queens seems to have increased, and remained in full vigor in Albany and Ulster.

January 1st, 1690, Leisler issued a warrant to have Andrew Gibb, the clerk of Queens county, brought before him, to answer for not delivering the papers belonging to the office to Mr. Denton, the new clerk, whom he had appointed.

February 15th, he issued orders to the sheriff, and to the civil and military officers of that county, to secure Col. Thomas Dongan, the late governor, in his own house, and to bring Col. Thomas Willett, Capt. Thomas Hicks, Daniel Whitehead, and Edward Antill, esquires, before the council.

February 21st, he issued orders to have Col. Dongan, Stephen Van Cortland, Anthony Brockholst, and Matthew Plowman, esquire, seized and brought before him.

August 9th, 1690, Leisler issued a proclamation, requiring the members of Assembly to meet at New-York the first day of September ensuing, to which day they were prorogued.

August 11th, after reciting that Nathaniel Pierson, one of the deputies elected to the assembly for Queens county, and Wilhelmus Beekman, one of the deputies from New-York, had refused to serve at the meeting in April, he ordered those counties respectively to choose others in their room, to meet with the deputies of the other counties, at their ensuing session in September.

August 13th, he sent a summons to Albany, and probably to the other counties that had not chosen deputies in the



spring, to choose deputies, to meet with the other deputies in September. It does not appear, however, that the summons was complied with in one of those counties.

The assembly met in September, by which the two following acts were passed :

An act, passed October 2d, 1690, for levying a tax of three pence in the pound ; one half to be paid the 20th of January, and the other half the 25th of March, ensuing.

An act, passed October 4th, imposing a fine of £70 on every person who should refuse to serve, in a civil or military capacity, under a commission issued by Leisler ; also, imposing a fine of £100 on every person who should remove from the counties of Albany and Ulster ; and, in cases of inability to pay that sum, leaving it to the discretion of Leisler to fix the fine ; also, prohibiting the transportation of goods, except certain specified articles, from the said counties, under the penalty of their confiscation.

The last act was intended to restrain the people of those counties from going to Connecticut, where they resorted in order to avoid the persecution of Leisler and his officers.

It seems that the opposition in Queens was not suppressed by the measures before taken for that purpose.

October 18th, 1690, Leisler ordered Major Milbourn "to take what force he could raise, to suppress the opposition in Queens county."

October 26, he suspended the court of oyer and terminer, about to sit in Kings county, "until the counties on Long-Island should be reduced to obedience."

October 30th, Leisler, after stating that a rebellion existed in Queens county, issued orders to Samuel Staats and Capt. Thomas Williams "to suppress it." He also ordered Thomas Williams and Samuel Edsdall to go to Flushing bay to examine the vessels there, to see that none were employed in a way prejudicial to his interest. Capt. Richard Ingolsby arrived in New York with his company the last of January, 1691, and demanded possession of the fort, which Leisler refused ; which added a new subject to the public contentions.

The colony seems to have continued in this convulsed condition to the end of Leisler's administration.

Leisler's authority was terminated by the arrival of Henry Slaughter, the new Governor, March 19th, 1691.

He refused to deliver up the fort to the new governor ; and thus violated all his former professions of zeal for King

William, forfeited all claim to any merit for his services, and incurred the reproach as well as the penalty of usurpation.

Leisler, and Milbourn his son-in-law, were tried and convicted of high treason; and the warrant for their execution was issued by the advice of both the council and assembly.

Leisler's son preferred a complaint against the governor, which was referred to the lords of trade; who reported, March 11th, 1692, "that they were humbly of opinion that Jacob Leisler and Jacob Milbourn, deceased, were condemned, and had suffered, according to law."

November 12th, 1694, the parliament, on the application of Leisler's son, reversed their attainder; and, in compassion to their families, restored them their estates.

From the history of that period, it appears that the revolution in England was then completed, and the people of the colony were generally, if not unanimously in favour of it.

The members of the council and the lieutenant governor were friendly to it. They, however, were disposed to wait for the changes which they anticipated, without disturbing the public peace by any violent measures.

Leisler, on the other hand, on pretence that those in power were in the interest of King James, raised a party among those whom he could influence and control, to expel them from office, and to take the government into their own hands.\*

\* It is intimated in a note in Hutchinson's history of Massachusetts, that Nicholson, the Lieut. Governor, was well affected to the revolution, but that Leisler wished to wrest the government out of the hands of the Lieut. Governor, in order to evade the payment of £100, which he owed for duties, or at least to avoid paying it to the person who then held the office of collector, who, as he alleged, was a papist.

That to effect his purpose, he caused it to be reported at the east end of Long-Island that the Fort at New-York was in danger of being delivered up to the enemies of the revolution, and solicited the people there to aid in its reduction.

It is further stated that a military company marched to Jamaica, where they halted till the officers had an interview with the Lieut. Governor and council, who satisfied them that the report was unfounded, and they immediately returned home; and that Leisler was forced on other false alarms to induce the people of the city to aid him in his enterprise.

This account is countenanced by the records of Easthampton. May 8, 1689, "heard from New-York that the fort is in hands whose fidelity is suspected. Voted that soldiers go to York to assist to reduce the place, that it might be better secured for the safety of the country." It was not till the 31st of May that the militia of New-York seized the fort, from which it is evident that the militia of East Hampton must have performed their tour, and returned home before the seizure of the Fort.

It was probably owing to this intrigue of Leisler, that the people of Easthampton, who were devoted to the revolution, distrusted the purity of his motives; and, even after their negotiation for a union with Connecticut had failed, resolved, on the 3d of May, 1690, that they would not submit to Leisler, but would continue as they were.

The above representation is still further confirmed by the appointment of Nicholson to the government of Virginia, shortly afterwards, by King William, which shows that he had no suspicion of his attachment to the revolution.

That the excitement in New-York, which led to the taking of the fort was created by artifice and management, is to be inferred from the letter of Nicholson, Phillips, Bayard and Van Courtland, to the people of Boston, dated New-York, May 1st, 1690, in which they state, "For this part of the government, we find the people in general inclined to peace and quietness, and doubt not the people will remain in their duties."

Smith also states, in his history, that Leisler, while he was contending with the convention at Albany for the possession of the fort there, in order to procure succour from Boston, "falsely represented the convention as in the interest of the French and king James."

By their assistance, he wrested the government out of the hands of the lieutenant governor, in defiance of the opinions of those whose talents, experience, and standing in society, entitled them to respect.

These were unwilling to recognize an authority which they considered illegitimate, and assumed merely to forestal the favour of the new king, and declined to serve in the assembly which Leisler summoned, or under any commission issued by him.

To sustain his authority, Leisler had recourse both to civil penalties and military force, and was hurried into the same excesses for which the former governors were so much reproached.

It is not probable that he at first anticipated the career that led to his ruin, but that he only aspired to the distinction of being considered the foremost in his zeal for the revolution. When, by the delay of the governor's arrival, and the partiality of his friends, he found himself in possession of the reins of government, and especially after the letters from England to Nicholson furnished him with a pretext for his authority, he became fond of power; and was so infatuated by its exercise, that he lost the remembrance of his duty as a subject, and fell a victim to his ambition.

The assumption of power by Leisler was a misfortune to the colony. It was of no benefit to the revolution; it deranged the operations of the government, set one part of the community against the other, and laid the foundation of divisions which destroyed the harmony of the colony for many years.

If the government had been suffered to continue in the hands of Nicholson and the old council, it is probable that the colony would have been protected against the ravages of the French and Indians. The expedition against Quebec might have succeeded, and society would not have been disturbed by party animosity.

### III.—*Of the Colony Government.*

The commission of Governor Slaughter, dated January 9th, 1689, constituted the foundation of the colony government after the revolution; which continued as it was then settled, with few innovations, until the American revolution.

The executive power was vested in the governor, and the

legislative power in the governor, council and assembly, subject to the revision of the king, to whom all laws were to be sent within three months after their passage.

The council at first consisted of seven members, which number was afterwards increased to twelve, and were appointed by the king.

The assembly was composed of delegates from each county, chosen by the freeholders. The number was regulated by law. The term of service was indefinite until 1743, when it was limited to seven years.

The governor could suspend the members of the council, and appoint others, subject to the king's approbation. He had a negative on the acts passed by the assembly and council. He had power to summon, prorogue, or dissolve, the assembly; to appoint all public officers; and, with the consent of the council, to establish courts of justice, to dispose of the public lands, and to disburse the public moneys raised for the support of government.

For some years, the public revenue went into the hands of a receiver general, who was appointed by the crown, and was not accountable to the assembly. The acts for raising revenue for the support of government were continued for a series of years without appropriation; and the council exercised a concurrent power over revenue bills, as in other cases.

This mode of managing the revenue was liable to great abuse. An indefinite support enabled the governor to dispense with the assembly, and rendered him in great measure independent of them during that period; and the omission of specific appropriations enabled the governor to fix the salaries of all public officers, to dispose of the public moneys as he pleased, gave him the entire power over the civil list, and led to misapplication and embezzlement.

The assembly also soon discovered that their influence in the government depended on a vigilant exercise of their power over the public supplies; and they resolved to correct these abuses. On their petition, queen Ann, in 1706, gave them permission to appoint their own treasurer, to receive and pay all such moneys as they should raise for extraordinary purposes.

As the quit rent charged on the patents for the public lands was the only ordinary revenue, the power of the treasurer was construed to extend to all the monies raised by the assembly for public uses.



In 1709, the assembly assumed the control of the money raised by them for the support of government, by appropriating it to specific purposes. It was usual to pass one bill to raise the money required, and another to appropriate the payment of it to the particular purposes for which it was raised.

In 1711, the assembly resolved to disallow any alteration to be made by the council in revenue bills. In reply to the claim of an equal right over the subject by the council, they observed "that the power of the council flowed from the pleasure of the prince, signified by the commission of the governor; but that the power of the assembly, in relation to taxes, flowed from the choice of the people, who could not be divested of their money without their consent," and they seem uniformly to have adhered to this determination ever after.

In 1737, they resolved not to continue the revenue for a longer term than one year; and in reply to Governor Clarke, who demanded an indefinite support, they say, "we will not raise sums unfit to be raised, nor put it in the power of a governor to misapply them, or continue the revenue for any longer term than one year."

In 1741, the assembly, in reply to the same governor, who renewed the demand for an indefinite support, without appropriation, state, "that the course he recommended had formerly been pursued, and had led to the misapplication and embezzlement of the public money, and that the practice of providing public supplies by annual grants, and the receipt and payment of the public monies by their own treasurer, with appropriation to specific purposes, was the only method to correct the evil;" and they intimate their determination to adhere to it.

July 14th, 1747, the assembly, in their answer to Governor Clinton, who remonstrated against their adherence to specific appropriations, after admitting appropriations to be for general uses in England, and the particular application of the money left to the king, they say, "the case in the plantations is very different; the governors seldom have any estates in the colonies, and their interest is entirely distinct and different from that of the people, and therefore it is that they seldom regard the welfare of the people, otherwise than as they can make it subservient to their own particular interest; and as they know the time of their continuance in their governments to be uncertain, all methods are used,

and all engines set to work to raise estates to themselves; and therefore, should the public monies be left to their disposition, what can be expected but the grossest misapplication under various pretences, which will never be wanting. This has often been actually the case in this colony, and when such misapplication happens, there are no means of redress." "We cannot answer it to our constituents to pass any bill for raising money on them, and leave it to be disposed of at the will and pleasure of a governor."

The strife between the respective governors and assemblies, respecting a permanent support, continued to vex the colony until September 24th, 1756, when Sir Charles Hardy, the governor, informed the assembly that he had received instructions allowing him to assent to their temporary bills for the support of government.\*

These contests arose from the tyranny of the mother country over the colonies, and were the result of the European colony system. The relation between the mother country and a colony ought to be modified in the same manner as that which subsists between a parent and child, and the relation ought so far to cease, when the colony becomes competent to her own self-subsistence, as relates to the regulation of their internal concerns. To enforce the continuance of the entire subjection of the colony, after that period, is as incongruous as to hold a child in a state of pupilage after he has arrived at the age of manhood; reduces the colony to a state of political vassalage, and is a despotic exercise of authority on the part of the mother country.

A monopoly of the trade of a colony is the only remuneration that can be made to the mother country, compatible with the well-being of the colony, and is an ample equivalent for the care and protection of the mother country.

The American colonies, at the conclusion of the peace in 1763, had become fully competent to the management of their own internal concerns. They were desirous to maintain

\* Smith, in his history of New-York, page 371, allows that the reasons of the assembly for assuming the control of the public money, were plausible!

This author pretty freely censures the personal character and party policy of some of the later governors, but is sparing of his remarks on the despotism of the colony system by which they were controlled; nor does he attempt to shew the practicability of so modifying it as to render the internal improvement of the colony compatible with the political supremacy of the mother country, without which there was no alternative for the colonies, but vassalage or independence.

Contrasting the political reflections which occur in his work, with the course which he took when the crisis arrived which put his patriotism to the test, makes the remark which he applied to Lieutenant Governor Delancy, on account of his opposition to the plan of union of 1754, peculiarly applicable to his own case, viz.: "Many had conceived him to be most inclined to the popular branch of the constitution, but now discovered that he had his eye to the other side of the water."

a political connection with the mother country ; they acknowledged her political supremacy, and acquiesced in her power to regulate their external relations, their foreign commerce and navigation, but contended for the right to regulate their own internal affairs. The mother country, on the contrary, claimed the right to control their internal regulations, so as to render them subservient to her interests, and to prolong their subjection to her authority. It was for the first of these purposes that she prohibited the establishment of such manufactures as would interfere with her own ; that she refused her assent to laws imposing duties on the importation of her manufactures ; that she opposed the acts for issuing paper money, or required them to be so modified as to suit her interests ; and that she made lands assets for the payment of debts due to her merchants. It was for the second purpose that she refused her assent to annual assemblies ; that she required the establishment of a permanent revenue, that she objected to specific appropriation of the public monies, which limited the public patronage of the governor ; and that she required the judges' commissions to be issued during pleasure.\*

It was by pressing this interference in the internal affairs of the colonies, until she assumed the power of imposing taxes on them without their consent, that forced them upon resistance for self-preservation.

The colony governors were bound by their instructions to enforce such measures as were enjoined by the policy of the mother country, and were required to withhold their assent from all such acts as infringed the claims of the royal prerogative.

A neglect of his instructions exposed a governor to the forfeiture of the royal favor, and the loss of his office. However well disposed he might be to favor the interests of the

\* In 1724, the king repealed an act of the colony imposing a small duty on European dry goods.

In 1750, parliament prohibited the establishment of slitting mills.

In 1754, the colonies were prohibited from exporting hats to the West Indies.

In 1732, parliament passed an act making land assets for the payment of British debts.

It was a standing instruction of the governors to insist on a permanent revenue, without appropriation, until 1756.

The governors were also instructed to refuse their assent to any emission of paper money, with a legal tender.

In 1739, the king refused his assent to an act passed here in 1737, for triennial assemblies. The governors were instructed to issue their commissions of the judges during pleasure.

In 1761, the lords of trade, in a formal report, say that to grant commissions to the colony judges during good behaviour, " would be subversive of all true policy, destructive to the interests of his majesty's subjects, as tending to lessen that just dependence which the colonies ought to have upon the mother country."

The governors, in two or three instances, departed from their instructions in relation to the judges' commissions, and from public necessity were compelled to do it generally with regard to paper money.

colony, and to secure the good opinion of the people, he had a stronger interest to promote the views of the mother country, and to secure the favor of the crown.

Those who at first felt some regard for the rights of the colonists, were soon forced by their station to lend their talents to the enforcement of the colony system.

Few of them understood the policy necessary to the improvement of a new country, or made any efforts for that purpose.

The internal improvement of the country, the advancement of the liberal professions, and the cultivation of literature and the arts, seem alike to have been overlooked and neglected by them.

A few solitary suggestions were sometimes made by them on these subjects, but what few exertions were made towards public improvements were made by intelligent and public spirited individuals.

The smallness of our numbers indeed greatly obstructed the improvement of the country or society. Various causes contributed to this effect. The smallness of our territory unoccupied by the Indians, the extraordinary military services imposed on our citizens by our local situation, the constant exposure of the frontiers to the depredations of the French and Indians, before the conquest of Canada, the difficulty of obtaining lands for settlement, in consequence of the practice pursued by the governors, of granting them in large tracts to favorites, who would only lease or sell them at a high price.\* To these may be added a dislike to the government, which was less free than the chartered governments of New-England, from whence emigrants were chiefly to be expected. The apprehension also of the probability of a legal establishment of the Episcopal church, with exclusive privileges, in the colony, induced by the efforts made by the governor to have the ministers of that church supported by taxes levied on all other denominations, combined with ancient prejudices engendered by controversies between the New-England people and the Dutch, before the conquest of the colony, prevented much emigration into the colony. Few efforts were made by the colony governors to remove these obstacles to the increase of our numbers and progress of society.

\* The governors charged £12 10s. patent fees for every thousand acres of the public lands, to which £5 were added for surveying fees. Grants were refused to settlers who were unable to advance the office fees, and the settlement of the country was retarded by the avarice of the governors.



The chief regards of our colony governors were confined to measures calculated to secure an ascendancy over the Five Nations, to undermine the French power in Canada, and to guard the claims of the royal prerogative, and the interests of the mother country. Measures which were merely calculated to improve the country, or to meliorate the moral condition of the inhabitants, were of less moment, in their estimation, than such as were calculated to secure their own emolument or continuance in power.

While the governors were vigilant in urging such measures as were subservient to their own views and the claims of the mother country, the colonial assemblies endeavored to withstand such of them as were deemed to infringe on their constitutional rights and liberties. On these subjects they were frequently at variance with the assemblies, and often harrassed them by prorogations and dissolutions in order to worry them into a compliance with their favorite measures; and the whole colony administration exhibits a constant conflict between the claims and encroachments of power, on the one hand, and the spirit of liberty struggling to defeat them, on the other.

Their residence in the country was in most cases expected to be temporary, and as the assembly state, in their address to the lords of trade, in 1753, they very often seem to have "considered the office as a post of profit," and their chief study seems to have been to make the most of it, and to carry as much money out of the colony as was in their power.

The whole history of the colony government evinced that it was in vain to expect a patriotic devotion to the public welfare, from men who were not bound to the country by any ties of personal interest, or responsible to the country for the faithful discharge of their public trust; and that subserviency to the crown, and a disregard of the people, were vices inherent in the very nature of colony government.

These contests between the colony governors and assemblies taught the people to investigate and understand their rights, to appreciate the danger of the measures of the mother country to their liberties, and prepared them for the revolution, which terminated in the independence of the country.\*

\* The constant danger to which the colonies had been exposed by the ambition of the French in their neighborhood, and their influence with the Indians, from the massacre of the people of Schenectady in 1690, until the conquest of Canada in 1760, kept them dependant on Great Britain; and the necessity they were under for her aid to their security, prevented her being jealous of them.

After Canada was added to the number of the colonies, she began to be jealous of their grow-

*Of the Sufferings of the People of Long-Island during the War of the Revolution.*

The powers of the colony governor were suspended in October, 1775, and until the adoption of the constitution, the government was administered by a provincial congress or convention, aided by town and county committees.

Public spirit supplied the place of authority, and gave the recommendations of those bodies the force of law.\*

The island was evacuated the night of the 29th of August, 1776; and in October following, the county committees, and the committees of the several towns, were, by force or fear, prevailed on, by written declarations, to revoke and disannul all their proceedings, and to renounce and disavow the authority of the provincial and continental congresses, and the members of the several committees, and the people generally, were obliged to take the oath of allegiance to the king.†

From 1776 to 1783, the island was occupied by British troops. They traversed it from one end to the other, and were stationed at different places during the war.

The whole country within the British lines was subject to

ing strength and importance, and then for the first time, perceived that the means which she had adopted for the enlargement of her power were calculated to endanger and abridge it. Immediately after the treaty by which Canada was ceded to Great Britain, in 1763, she determined to maintain a military force in the colonies, to overawe them, and to raise a national revenue from them, "for the better support of government and the administration of the colonies;" the effect of which would have been to render the governors, judges, and other officers appointed by the crown, independent of the colony legislatures. The surplus revenue was to be at the disposal of Parliament. In 1764, the British Parliament imposed a duty on sugar and molasses. In 1765, the stamp act was imposed, which, in consequence of the determined opposition with which it was resisted, was repealed the ensuing year.

During the same year, 1766, an act was passed requiring the colonies to provide quarters, and certain enumerated supplies for the troops stationed among them. The assembly of New-York provided barracks for the troops stationed there, but omitted to make provision for a few of the articles enumerated among the supplies.

In 1767, an act was passed restraining the governor and council from assenting to any bill until the assembly furnished the supplies required.

In 1767 also, new duties were imposed on paper, glass, painter's colours, and tea, and a board of commissioners were appointed to enforce the collection of the duties.

The colonies repeatedly remonstrated against these acts, as destructive of their rights and liberties.

In 1770, all the duties were repealed, except the duty on tea, and this involved the principle that the parliament had the power to pass laws to bind the colonies in all cases whatsoever.

The colonies held that taxation and representation were inseparable, and that, as they were not represented in parliament, they could not be rightfully taxed by parliament.

A determination to resist the violation of this principle, on the part of the colonies, and a determination to enforce their measures by the sword, on the part of the British ministry, led to a union of the colonies, and to the war of the revolution, which resulted in the acknowledgment of the independence of the United States by Great Britain, in 1783.

\* The first Continental Congress met at Philadelphia, September 4, 1774, and the second met May 10, 1775. The Provincial Congress of New-York met the 22d May, 1775, and on the 27th they recommended to the several counties, to appoint county and town committees, which was immediately complied with. Governor Tryon withdrew from the city of New-York, and went on board a British ship on the 13th of October, 1775, which day has been considered as the date of the dissolution of the colony government.

† General Howe issued a proclamation soon after he landed on Long-Island, promising security and protection to such as should remain peaceably on their farms, and most of the inhabitants availed themselves of it, and remained on the island during the war.

martial law, the administration of justice was suspended, the army was a sanctuary for crimes and robbery, and the grossest offences were atoned by enlistment.

The massacre of General Woodhull, in cold blood, was a prelude to what others were to suffer, who had taken an active part in favor of the revolution.—[See Appendix.] Many of those who had served as officers in the militia, or as members of the town and county committees, fled into the American lines for safety. Those who remained at home were harrassed and plundered of their property, and the inhabitants generally were subject to the orders, and their property to the disposal, of the British officers.

They compelled the inhabitants to do all kinds of personal services, to work at their forts, to go with their teams, on foraging parties, and to transport their cannon, ammunition, provisions, and baggage, from place to place, as they changed their quarters, and to go and come on the order of every petty officer who had the charge of the most trifling business.

In 1781, the town of Huntington was compelled to raise £176 by a general tax, as a commutation for personal labor, towards digging a well in the fort on Lloyd's Neck.

The officers seized and occupied the best rooms in the houses of the inhabitants. They compelled them to furnish blankets and fuel for the soldiers, and hay and grain for their horses. They pressed their horses and wagons for the use of the army. They took away their cattle, sheep, hogs and poultry, and seized without ceremony, and without any compensation, or for such only as they chose to make for their own use, whatever they desired to gratify their wants or wishes.

In April, 1783, Sir Guy Carlton instituted a board of commissioners for the purpose of adjusting such demands against the British army, as had not been settled. The accounts of the people of the town of Huntington alone, for property taken from them, for the use of the army, which were supported by receipts of British officers, or by other evidence, which were prepared to be laid before the board, amounted to £7,249 9s. 6d., and these accounts were not supposed to comprise one-fourth part of the property which was taken from them without compensation.

These accounts were sent to New-York to be laid before the board of commissioners, but they sailed for England without attending to them, and the people from whom the

property was taken were left, like their neighbors who had no receipts, without redress.

If the other towns on the island suffered half as much in proportion, the whole island must have sustained actual losses by the war exceeding \$500,000, besides innumerable other injuries.

The inhabitants suffered great abuse from the British refugees, who, whenever they could shelter themselves under any color of authority, did all the injury in their power. Many of these devoted themselves to robbery and pillage, and if they were detected, they enlisted, and this arrested the arm of justice, shielded them from punishment, and enabled them to bid defiance to those whom they had robbed and abused.

During the whole war, the inhabitants of the island, especially those of Suffolk county, were perpetually exposed to the grossest insult and abuse. They had no property of a moveable nature that they could, properly speaking, call their own; they were oftentimes deprived of the stock necessary to the management of their farms, and were deterred from endeavoring to produce more than a bare subsistence by the apprehension that a surplus would be wrested from them, either by the military authority of the purveyor, or by the ruffian hand of the plunderer.

Besides these violations of the rights of person and property, the British officers did many acts of barbarity, for which there could be no apology.

They made garrisons, store-houses, or stables, of the houses of public worship in several towns, and particularly of such as belonged to the Presbyterians.

In the fall of 1782, at the conclusion of the war, about the time the provisional articles of the treaty of peace were signed in Europe, Colonel Thompson, (since said to be Count Rumford,) who commanded the troops then stationed at Huntington, without any assignable purpose, except that of filling his own pockets, by its furnishing him with a pretended claim on the British treasury for the expense, caused a fort to be erected in Huntington, and without any possible motive except to gratify a malignant disposition, by vexing the people of Huntington, he placed it in the centre of the public burying-ground, in defiance of a remonstrance of the trustees of the town, against the sacrilege of disturbing the ashes and destroying the monuments of the dead.



*Hardships imposed by the State Legislature.*

Much, however, as the people of Long-Island had suffered from the injustice, cruelty, and oppression of the common enemy, they were not suffered to taste the cup of liberty until it was, in some measure, embittered by the unkindness of their friends.

It was their lot to be abandoned by their country, and left in the power of the enemy. It was their misfortune, and not their fault, that they were not within the American lines; that they were disarmed, and in subjection to the enemy, instead of being in the tented field, and in arms against them.

By an act of the legislature of the State of New-York, passed March 17, 1783, in actions for damages to the property of persons within the American lines, those who had been compelled by military orders, and even by military force, to contribute to the damage, were prohibited from pleading the same in justification, or from giving the same in evidence on the general issue.

By another act, passed May 6, 1784, a tax of £100,000 was imposed on the southern district, £37,000 of which was assigned to Long-Island, as a compensation to the other parts of the state, for not having been in a condition to take an active part in the war against the enemy!!!

Both these acts were violations of public law, and the immutable principles of justice; were partial and oppressive in their operation, and fully proved that an abuse of power was not peculiar to the British parliament, but a common infirmity of human nature; and in conflicts of local interests, fomented by local jealousies, might sometimes occur under the freest forms of government.

## APPENDIX.



### *Of General Woodhull.*

Nathaniel Woodhull was a descendant of Richard Woodhull, esq., who is supposed to have left England in consequence of having taken an active part in favor of liberty, under Charles I., a short time before the restoration of Charles II., in 1660.

He is named in the original deeds for Jamaica, as one of the first proprietors of that town, but seems to have settled at Brookhaven soon after the settlement of that place. An original letter, written by Lord Crew, to the said Richard Woodhull, in 1687, in answer to one of his, is among the papers of the late Abraham Woodhull, esq., of Brookhaven, in which he styles him cousin, and speaks of his relations, among whom he enumerates a bishop, and a number of families of the first rank and respectability in society.

Mr. Woodhull had three brothers younger than himself, Richard, Jesse and Ebenezer. Richard graduated at Yale College in 1752, was a tutor there some years, and died at New-Haven. Jesse and Ebenezer settled in Orange county, and their posterity reside there.

Nathaniel was born in 1722, and spent his youth with his father, who was an opulent farmer at Mastic, in Brookhaven, and his education was such as was calculated to fit him for the duties of active life.

He was endowed by nature with a strong discriminating mind, and a sound judgment, which soon attracted the notice of his fellow citizens, and pointed him out as peculiarly qualified for public usefulness.

His first public employment was in a military capacity, in the war between Great Britain and France, which commenced in 1754, and terminated in 1760.

It is not known that Mr. Woodhull entered the army before 1758. Previously to that year, the war had been conducted without much system or vigor, and the French had the superiority in every campaign.

The defeat of Braddock in 1755—the acquisition of Oswego in 1756, and of Fort William Henry in 1757, gave them the command of Lake Champlain, the western lakes,

and of the whole country between Canada and Louisiana, west of the Alleghany mountains. This secured to them the ascendancy over the Indian tribes, and they threatened to confine the colonies to very narrow limits, or to wrest them from Great Britain.

In 1758, under the administration of William Pitt, it was determined to make more vigorous efforts to limit or reduce the French power in America.

For this purpose, a large body of regular troops, with well appointed officers, and a powerful fleet, were sent from England, and the northern colonies were called on to raise their respective proportions of 20,000 men, to aid the regular forces in their operations against the French. Of this number 2680 were allotted to New-York, during the year 1758-59 and 60, of which 657 were assigned to Long-Island—300 to Queens, 289 to Suffolk, and 68 to Kings. The colony had only furnished 800 in 1755, 1350 in 1756, and 1000 in 1757.

During the year 1758, Louisburgh was taken by General Amherst, aided by the fleet under admiral Boscawen. Fort Du Quesne was taken by General Forbes, and its name changed to Fort Pitt. General Abercrombie was repulsed in his efforts against Ticonderoga, the 8th of July; but Fort Frontenac was subsequently reduced by a detachment from his army the 27th of August, under the command of Colonel Bradstreet.

The detachment consisted of 3000 men, chiefly provincial troops, and 1112 of them of the New-York levies.

In 1759, General Amherst succeeded General Abercrombie as commander-in-chief, and the conquest of Canada was resolved on. The plan of the campaign was to make the attack at the same time by the upper lakes, Lake Champlain, and by the St. Lawrence.

During this season, Niagara was taken by a detachment under General Prideaux, who was killed by a casualty, and was succeeded by Sir William Johnson, who completed the conquest the 25th of July. Ticonderoga and Crown Point were taken by the troops under General Amherst, June 23, and Quebec was surrendered, September 18, to the army commanded by Gen. Wolfe, who fell in the attack.

In 1760, the plan adopted the preceding year was vigorously prosecuted. The French forces were concentrated at Montreal, and the three detachments of the army by way of Ontario, Champlain, and up the St. Lawrence, under the

command of Generals Amherst, Haviland and Murray, respectively arrived before Montreal within 48 hours of each other.

The united forces were so formidable, that M. De Vaudreuil, the Governor-general, deemed it improvident to risk an action, or to sustain a siege; and on the 8th of September, 1760, he surrendered the whole province of Canada and its dependencies, to the united regular and provincial forces, under General Amherst, which was confirmed to Great Britain by the treaty of Paris, February 10th, 1763.

In 1758, Mr. Woodhull was a major in one of the New-York battalions. He was with the troops under General Abercrombie at Ticonderoga, the 8th of July, and he accompanied Col. Bradstreet in the expedition, which he conducted against fort Frontenac, and assisted in the reduction of that fortress, the 27th of August ensuing. The army left Schenectady the 28th of July for the Oneida carrying place. On their route on the night of the 5th of August, 150 of the Jersey troops deserted from the encampment, near the German Flats. Major Woodhull was despatched on the morning of the 6th with a detachment of 300 of the New-York troops in pursuit of them, and overtook and returned with them on the night of the 7th. This expedition, both in respect to the splendor of the achievement and its beneficial effects in weakening the influence of the French with the Indians, in interrupting their intercourse with their upper forts, and in lessening their ability to furnish them with military supplies as well as in diverting the course of the fur trade, was one of the most important events that occurred during the whole war. It contributed, in a great measure, to efface the disgrace which the army had just sustained by their repulse at Ticonderoga. In this expedition the venerable Col. Marinus Willet, who was a lieutenant and one of the party, states, that the conduct of Major Woodhull was that of "a first rate officer."\*

\* The expedition under Col. Bradstreet consisted of the following troops: Regulars, 135—royal artillery, 30—New-York provincials, 1112—Massachusetts do. 675—New-Jersey do. 412—Rhode-Island do. 318—batteau men, 300, and about 60 rangers—in all 3035. The regulars were commanded by Capt. Ogilvie, and the artillery by Lieutenant Brown.

The New-York troops consisted of two detachments. The first commanded by Lieut. Colonel Charles Clifton, of Ulster, amounting in the whole to 440, under Capts. Jonathan Ogden, of Westchester, Peter Dabois, of New-York, Samuel Bladgley, of Dutchess, and Daniel Wright, of Queens. The second was commanded by Lieut. Col. Isaac Corse, of Queens, and Major Nathaniel Woodhull, of Suffolk, amounting to 668, under captains Elias Hand, of Suffolk, Richard Hewlett, of Queens, Thomas Arrowsmith, of Richmond, William Humphrey, of Dutchess, Ebenezer Seely, of Ulster, and Peter Yates and Goosen Van Schaick, of Albany.

The troops left fort Stanwix, August 14th, 1758, and the fort capitulated the 27th, by which the garrison, artillery stores, and two schooners, fell into the hands of the victors. The commander of the fort was exchanged for Col. Peter Schuyler, who had been taken the year before,



In 1759, two battalions of the New-York troops accompanied General Prideaux to Niagara; and one went with Gen. Amherst to Ticonderoga; and, it is supposed, that Major Woodhull was made a lieutenant colonel, and accompanied the troops who went on one or other of these expeditions.

In March, 1760, he was promoted to the rank of colonel, and commanded the third regiment of New-York troops in the expedition against Canada.

After the conquest of Canada, he was discharged with the provincial troops, and returned to the duties and employments of a private citizen, with the reputation of having discharged the duties of his military stations with honor and ability.

Soon after this period, the government of Great Britain, not satisfied with having the control of the trade of the colonies, conceived the project of raising a revenue from them, by the imposition of duties on their imports, to be regulated, as to their extent and amount, solely by the discretion of the British Parliament.

A doctrine so hostile to the principles of the British constitution, as well as to the freedom and security of the colonies, created a general excitement, and roused a spirit of resistance throughout the colonies.

December 28th, 1768, the assembly of New-York adopted a number of spirited resolutions; and among other things, they in substance, resolved unanimously—that the people of the colonies enjoyed the same rights as the people of England in not being liable to be taxed but by their own representatives; that the rights and privileges of the legislatures could not be abridged, superceded, abrogated, or annulled; and that they had a right to consult with the other colonies, in matters wherein their liberties might be affected. In consequence of which, the governor, Sir Henry Moore, on the 2d of January, dissolved them.

The people of Suffolk county, from their first settlement, had held that there could be no taxation without representation; and, in 1670, had refused to pay a tax imposed on them by Governor Lovelace, before they were permitted to

and enabled the country to avail itself of the experience of that excellent officer during the two ensuing campaigns.

Col. Corsa, who had distinguished himself in the three preceding campaigns with a part of his troops volunteered to erect a battery in the night of the 26th, in the midst of the enemy's fire, which in the morning commanded their fort, and led to an immediate surrender.

The Col. received a slight wound, but not so severe as to unfit him for duty. The detachment returned to fort Stanwix the 10th of September.

have an assembly, and their descendants were now determined to withstand a similar violation of their rights by the British Parliament.

The bravery, prudence, and patriotism of Col. Woodhull, had procured him the confidence and esteem of his fellow citizens. They now deemed his qualifications peculiarly fitted for the crisis, and manifested their confidence by electing him one of their representatives to the new assembly, that was summoned in the spring of 1769.

March 1st, 1769.—The people of Suffolk adopted certain instructions for William Nicoll, esq., and Colonel Nathaniel Woodhull, their members to the new assembly; and, among other things, express their confidence that they would exert their abilities “to preserve their freedom and the command over their own purses.”

Col. Woodhull continued a member of the assembly for the county of Suffolk, until the dissolution of the colony government in 1775; and the firmness and patriotism he displayed during that turbulent period, endeared him to the friends of freedom, and he received the cordial approbation of his constituents.

The people of Suffolk, April 6th, 1775, appointed him one of the delegates for that county, to the convention which met in the city of New-York the 20th of that month, to choose delegates to meet the delegates of the other colonies, at Philadelphia, the 10th of May then ensuing, in order to concert measures for the restoration of harmony between Great Britain and the colonies.

In May, 1775, he was chosen one of the delegates of the said county to the provincial Congress, which first met at New-York, the 22d of the same month, to co-operate with the continental congress, in such measures as they should devise for the public good.

August 22d, 1775.—The provincial congress re-organized the militia of the colony, and soon after appointed Col. Woodhull brigadier-general of the brigade composed of the militia of Suffolk and Queens; and at the same time appointed Capt. Jonathan Lawrence one of the delegates from Queens to the provincial congress, his major of Brigade.

Col. Woodhull was also proposed for the office of brigadier general in the continental service, June 9th, 1776, when Gen. Scott was elected to that station, and received the support of the members who were acquainted with his merits.

August 28th, 1775.—General Woodhull was elected president of the Provincial Congress, and continued to preside in that body until the 10th of August, 1776.

July 9th, 1776.—The Provincial Congress met at the White Plains, and on the first day of their meeting, ratified on the part of the people of this state, the declaration of Independence which had been adopted by the Continental Congress on the 4th inst., and immediately assumed the style of “the convention of the people of the state of New-York;” and set about framing a state constitution, which, in consequence of the interruptions of the war, and the public duties of the members, was not completed till April, 1777.

In the spring of 1776, it was apprehended that the British would shortly attempt the invasion of New-York, and preparations were made to repel them.

July 20th, 1776.—The convention ordered one fourth of the militia of Long-Island to be drafted, and to be ready for immediate service. These amounted to eight or nine hundred men, and were organized into two regiments, under Colonel Josiah Smith of Suffolk, and Colonel Jeromus Rensen, of Queens.

These troops marched to Brooklyn early in August, and were placed under the continental officer who commanded there.

July 29th, the convention met at Harlæm, to which place they had before adjourned.

August 10th—General Woodhull obtained leave of absence in order, it would seem, to visit his family and arrange his domestic affairs, probably under an impression that his services would shortly be required in the field.

August 22d.—The convention were informed that the British troops were landing, and that they were suffering for provisions, and they deemed it of great importance to prevent their obtaining supplies.

August 24.—The convention ordered out the militia of Queens, the two troops of horse, of Kings and Queens, and one half of the western regiment of Suffolk, with five days provisions, under the command of General Woodhull, who was ordered to march into “the western parts of Queens county,” and to “use all possible diligence to prevent the stock and other provisions from falling into the hands of the enemy, either by removing or destroying them.”

The same day, the convention passed several resolutions, prescribing, in detail, the mode in which they wished their

orders executed. They also sent William Smith and Samuel Townsend, esq's. two of their members, to General Washington, with a copy of their resolutions, who were instructed to state to him, that the convention were of opinion that it would be "extremely difficult, if not impracticable, to effect the objects of their resolutions, without an additional force, and to submit to his Excellency's consideration the propriety of ordering Col. Smith's and Col. Remsen's regiments to join the troops under General Woodhull."

Sunday, August 25th.—General Woodhull wrote to the convention, and from their answer, it would seem, stated what would be necessary to keep the troops together, and to enable him to execute their orders.

On the 26th, Messrs. Smith and Townsend reported that they had waited on General Washington—that to their request respecting Smith and Remsen's regiments, he replied "that he was afraid it was too late," but that he would immediately give orders for those two regiments to march into Queens county to join General Woodhull.

On the same day, the convention wrote to General Woodhull, and informed him that they had applied to General Washington to send Smith and Remsen's regiments to join him, to which he had assented, and that they expected that they were by that time on the ground. On the same day, they also sent him the resolutions which they had adopted on the 24th, with instructions, which seem not to have reached him till the next morning.

On the morning of the 27th, General Woodhull wrote to the convention from Jamaica. He acknowledged the receipt of their resolutions, and stated that he had removed all the cattle west and south of the hills—that he did not believe that Smith and Remsen would be able to join him with their regiments, and that unless they could send him some other assistance, he apprehended that he should soon be obliged to quit that part of the country.

In the afternoon of the same day the General again wrote by express, and stated that about 100 men of the western regiment of Suffolk had arrived the day before; that about 40 of the militia of Queens county had joined him, which with about 50 of the two companies of horse, of Kings and Queens, composed his whole force, and were nearly all that he expected—that he was within six miles of the enemy's camp—that their horse had been within two miles of him, and that without more men, his stay could answer no purpose.



The General, at the same time sent Jonathan Lawrence, esq., his brigade major, to the convention, to enforce his representations.

He that day removed the cattle from Newtown, and stationed his troops that night about two miles east of Jamaica, where he himself remained.

The convention unfortunately never met on the 27th, and business was transacted by the committee of safety, which was probably the reason why the express, who returned on the morning of the 28th, brought nothing but a copy of the communications of the 26th, which had been before received.

On the same morning of the 28th, General Woodhull wrote his last letter to the convention, in which he complained of their inattention to his situation—that in the letter received by his express, they had only repeated what they had before communicated, without answering his letters, or the message by his brigade major. He stated that he had collected and sent off about 1400 cattle with guards to the eastward; and had ordered the inhabitants that, in case he should not receive a reinforcement, to remove the remainder—that his troops were reduced to less than 100 men, and were daily diminishing, and that both men and horses were worn down by fatigue.

On the morning of the 28th, the convention sent Major Lawrence to General Washington with a letter, enclosing General Woodhull's letter of the preceding evening, and stated it to be their opinion that the stock on the Island might be saved from the enemy by the aid of Smith and Remsen's regiments, and that it was practicable to send them there.

On the receipt of General Woodhull's letter of that morning, the convention appointed John Sloss Hobart and James Townsend, esq's., two of their members, to repair to General Woodhull to aid him with their counsel. They, however, unhappily, never reached him.

The convention also sent David Gelston, esq., another of their members, to the governor of Connecticut, to solicit him to send over 1000 of the militia of that state to aid the militia on Long-Island.

Under the impression that Smith and Remsen's regiments would be sent to reinforce General Woodhull, the convention sent Mr. Van Wyck, a member from Queens county, to Flushing, to make arrangements for their transportation.

At 5 o'clock in the afternoon of the 28th, Major Lawrence returned with a letter from General Washington to the convention, in which he informed them that his situation was such that Smith and Remsen's regiments could not be spared.

The convention immediately appointed Samuel Townsend, esq., another member from Queens, to convey the intelligence to General Woodhull, then too late to be of any service to him.

The same evening the convention resolved to adjourn, to meet at Fishkill the ensuing Monday, the 2d of September, which was suspended by notice of a motion to re-consider the vote, which, on the morning of the 29th, was put, and lost, and they adjourned agreeable to the resolution of the preceding evening.

At this critical moment, the situation of General Woodhull was peculiarly embarrassing. If he had not received encouragement that he should be relieved, the smallness of his force would have justified an immediate retreat.

Every communication from the convention, from whom he received his orders, imported it to be their wish that he should retain his station in the western part of Queens county, and encouraged him to expect a reinforcement. The omission of any intelligence to the contrary, with the delay of the return of his brigade major, who was detained by the convention, was calculated to strengthen that expectation.

To have retreated under these circumstances would have been a violation of military rules, and in case of reliefs being sent, would have been deemed highly dishonorable.

In this emergency the General had no counsel but his own honorable feelings to consult, and he adopted the course which they dictated. He resolved not to make a final retreat until he heard from the convention.

On the morning of the 28th, the General ordered his troops to fall back, and take a station about four miles east of Jamaica, and there to remain till further orders.

The General remained at Jamaica till afternoon, in momentary expectation of a message from the convention. He then retired slowly with only one or two companions, still indulging the hope of intelligence from the convention, until he fell a sacrifice to his reliance on their vigilance and his own high sense of military honor, which forbid his abandoning the station assigned him, however perilous, before

he was assured that relief was hopeless, or he had orders to that effect.

A severe thunder shower, as is supposed, obliged him to take refuge in a public house about two miles east of Jamaica, and before he left it, he was overtaken by a detachment of the 17th regiment of British dragoons, and the 71st regiment British infantry, accompanied by some of the disaffected inhabitants as pilots.

The General immediately gave up his sword in token of his surrender. The ruffian who first approached him, (said to be a Major Baird, of the 71st,) as is reported, ordered him to say, "God save the King;" the General replied, "God save us all," on which he most cowardly and cruelly assailed the defenceless General with his broad sword, and would have killed him upon the spot, if he had not been prevented by the interference of an officer of more honor and humanity, (said to be Major Delancey of the dragoons,) who arrested his savage violence.

The General was badly wounded in the head, and one of his arms was mangled from the shoulder to the wrist. He was then taken to Jamaica, where his wounds were dressed, and with other prisoners, was confined in the stone church there, till some time the next day. He was then conveyed to Gravesend, and with about eighty other prisoners, (of which number Col. Robert Troup, of New-York, was one,) was confined in a vessel which had been employed to transport live stock for the use of the army, and was without accommodations for health or comfort.

The General was released from the vessel, on the remonstrance of an officer who had more humanity than his superiors, and was removed to an house near the church in New-Utrecht, where he was permitted to receive some attendance and medical assistance.

A cut in the joint of the elbow rendered an amputation of the arm necessary. As soon as this was resolved on, the General sent for his wife, with a request that she would bring with her all the money that she had in her possession, and all that she could procure, which was complied with, and he had it distributed among the American prisoners, to alleviate their sufferings, thus furnishing a lesson of humanity to his enemies, and closing a useful life by an act of charity.

He then suffered the amputation, which soon issued in a mortification, which terminated his life September the 20th, 1776, in the 54th year of his age.

The General left only one child, who is now living on her paternal estate at Mastic, in Brookhaven, and is the widow of the late General John Smith, deceased.

It is said that one of the battalions that was employed in this inglorious warfare against an unresisting individual, or some other one, was commanded by a Major Crew, a distant kinsman of the General, and that when he came to be apprized of that fact, and of the circumstances of the case, he was so disgusted that he either resigned his commission and quit the service, or obtained permission to leave the army and returned to England. The whole of the transactions of that period, bear the marks of inexperience and improvidence, of precipitation and alarm.

The talents of General Woodhull were adapted to a military station. With personal courage, he possessed judgment, decision, and firmness of character, tempered with conciliating manners, which commanded the respect and obedience of his troops, and at the same time, secured their confidence and esteem.

He had more military experience than most of the early officers of the revolutionary army, and no one in this state, at that time, promised to make a better general officer.

The nature of the service in which the General was employed and the force placed under his command, were alike unworthy of him.

The object of the expedition was to compel the enemy to retire, or to weaken them and bring them to terms, by preventing their obtaining the means of subsistence, either by removing the supplies out of their reach, or by destroying them.

It was not intended that the troops under his command should join the army, or engage any portion of the enemy, except such as should be detached in pursuit of supplies; nor would his force, if it had all been collected, have been adequate to more important exertions. The expedition was more suitable for the command of a subordinate officer; and prudence would have dictated that the General should have been reserved for a service in which his talents and experience were needed, and in which they could have been exerted.

Before the 27th, while the American army held the enemy in check, and prevented their detaching any considerable force from their main body, there was some ground for the convention to believe that a reinforcement of Smith and



Remsen's regiments would enable General Woodhull to effect the objects of the expedition, and the want of information that the changes in the army before that time prevented those regiments being sent to reinforce General Woodhull, agreeable to the encouragement which they had received from the commander-in-chief, authorized them to require him to keep his station. After that day the scene was changed. The fatal neglect to guard the left wing of the American army in the action of the 27th, furnished an inroad for the enemy, by which they intercepted and surprised the troops engaged with their centre and left wing—surrounded the American encampment—cut off all communication with General Woodhull, and were at liberty to send what force they pleased against him.

The General, in his letters of that date, intimated his belief that the relief they sought had become impracticable, and evidently indicated a wish for orders to retire. A disregard of his suggestions by the convention, caused the delay which resulted in his capture.

If the aid of Smith and Remsen's regiments could have been obtained, it would have been unavailing. It was in vain to expect that 1000 militia could withstand a force before which the American army had retired, and it was idle to make further efforts to procure the reinforcement.

The change effected in the relations of the two armies by the action of the 27th, indeed defeated the object of the expedition, and rendered the further prosecution of it useless and impracticable, and the convention owed it to themselves as well as to General Woodhull to issue immediate orders for him to retire.

The omission of the convention also to establish a regular and constant correspondence with the General, kept him in ignorance of the operations of the two armies, as well as of their own measures, and prevented his taking those precautions for his own safety which his situation required.

The capture of General Woodhull was one of the most calamitous events of that disastrous period. It deprived the country of the talents, the experience and counsels of one of the ablest and most patriotic of her citizens.

The cruel and dastardly treatment of a prisoner, especially of his rank and character, after a peaceable surrender, roused a spirit of indignation in the breast of every honest and disinterested man.

It contributed to alienate the affections of the people from a country, whose officers were capable of such unprincipled barbarity, and to strengthen the determination of all ranks, to adhere to the resolution then recently adopted by the continental congress and the convention of this state, to render the United States independent of her control.

General Woodhull was as much distinguished for his private and domestic virtues as for his zeal for the rights of his country, and was held in the highest estimation by all those who enjoyed his society, or had the pleasure of an intimate acquaintance with him.

His death spread a gloom over Long-Island—was universally lamented by the friends of freedom, to whom he was known, as well as by all those to whom he was endeared by social relations; and while the American revolution continues to be a subject of gratitude with the people of Long-Island, his memory will be cherished among their fondest recollections.

---

*Correspondence between General Woodhull and the  
Convention.*

August 25th, 1776, General Woodhull wrote to the convention. The letter cannot be found, but the contents may be inferred from the following answer:

*August 26th, 1776.*

Sir—Yours of yesterday is just come to hand, in answer to which we would inform you that Robert Townsend, the son of Samuel Townsend, esq., is appointed commissary for the troops under your command, of which we hope you will give him the earliest notice; and that we have made application to General Washington for the regiments under the command of Cols. Smith and Remsen, to join you. He assured our committee that he would issue out orders immediately for that purpose, and we expect that they are upon the spot by this time.

Confiding in your known prudence and zeal in the common cause, and wishing you the protection and blessing of heaven,

We are, with respect,  
Your very humble servants.

By order, &c. ABRAHAM YATES, Jun.

To Gen. NATHANIEL WOODHULL.

*Jamaica, August 27th, 1776.*

Gentlemen—I am now at Jamaica with less than 100 men, having brought all the cattle from the westward and southward of the hills, and have sent them off with the troops of horse, with orders to take all the rest eastward of this place, to the eastward of Hempstead Plains, to put them into fields and to set a guard over them.

The enemy, I am informed, are entrenching southward, and from the heights near Howard's.

I have now received yours, with several resolutions, which I wish it was in my power to put in execution; but unless Cols. Smith and Remsen, mentioned in yours, join me with their regiments, or some other assistance immediately, I shall not be able, for the people are all moving east, and I cannot get any assistance from them. I shall continue here as long as I can, in hopes of a reinforcement; but if none comes soon, I shall retreat and drive the stock before me into the woods.

Cols. Smith and Remsen, I think, cannot join me. Unless you can send me some other assistance, I fear I shall soon be obliged to quit this place. I hope soon to hear from you.

I am, gentlemen, your most humble serv't.,

NATHANIEL WOODHULL.

To the Hon. Convention of }  
the State of New-York. }

*Westward of Queens County, August 27th, 1776.*

Gentlemen—Inclosed I send you a letter from Col. Potter, who left me yesterday at 11 o'clock, after bringing about 100 men to me at Jamaica. Major Smith, I expect, has all the rest that were to come from Suffolk county. There have about 40 of the militia joined me from the regiments in Queens county, and about 50 of the troops belonging to Kings and Queens counties, which is nearly all I expect. I have got all the cattle southward of the hills in Kings county, to the eastward of the cross-road between the two counties, and have placed guards and sentinels from the north road to the south side of the Island, in order to prevent the cattle's going back, and to prevent the communication of the Tories with the enemy. I am within about six miles of the enemy's camp; their light horse have been within about two miles, and unless I have more men, our

stay here will answer no purpose. We shall soon want to be supplied with provisions, if we tarry here.

I am, gentlemen, your most ob'dt. humble serv't.,

NATHANIEL WOODHULL.

The Hon. Convention of New- }  
York, at Harlem. }

*Jamaica, August 28th, 1776.*

Gentlemen—I wrote two letters to you yesterday, one by express and another by Mr. Harper, and also sent my brigade-major to you, to let you know my situation, and I expected an answer to one of them last night, but my express informed me that he was detained till last night for an answer.

I have now received yours of the 26th, which is only a copy of the last, without a single word of answer to my letter, or the message by my brigade-major. I must again let you know my situation. I have about 70 men and about 20 of the troop, which is all the force I have or can expect, and I am daily growing less in number. The people are so alarmed in Suffolk, that they will not any more of them march; and as to Cols. Smith and Remsen, they cannot join me, for the communication is cut off between us. I have sent about 1100 cattle to the great fields on the plains, yesterday. About 300 more have gone off this morning to the same place, and I have ordered a guard of an officer and seven privates. They can get no water in those fields. My men and horses are worn out with fatigue. The cattle are not all gone off towards Hempstead. I ordered them off yesterday; but they were not able to take them along. I yesterday brought about 300 from Newtown. I think the cattle are in as much danger on the north side as on the south side; and have ordered the inhabitants to remove them, if you cannot send me an immediate reinforcement.

I am, &c.,

NATHANIEL WOODHULL.

The Hon. Convention of }  
New-York. }

*Correspondence between the Convention and Gen. Washington.*

*Wednesday morning, Aug. 28th, 1776.*

Sir—I am commanded by the convention to enclose to your Excellency the copy of a letter they received last even-



ing from Gen. Woodhull. The convention are of opinion that the enemy may be prevented from getting the stock and grain on Long-Island, if the regiments under the command of Col. Smith and Col. Remsen be sent to join Gen. Woodhull. That this junction may be effected, and how, Major Lawrence, who is a member of this convention and the bearer hereof, will inform your Excellency.

I have the honor to be, with great respect,

Your Excellency's most obedient servant,

By order, ABRAHAM YATES.

His Excellency, Gen. WASHINGTON.

---

*Long-Island, Aug. 28th, 1776.*

Sir—I was just now honored with your favor of this date, with General Woodhull's letter, and should esteem myself happy, were it in my power to afford the assistance required, but the enemy having landed a considerable part of their force here, and at the same time may have reserved some to attack New-York, it is the opinion, not only of myself, but of all my general officers I have had an opportunity of consulting with, that the men we have are not more than competent to the defense of those lines, and the several posts which must be defended. This reason, and this alone, prevents my complying with your request. I shall beg leave to mention, in confidence, that a few days ago, upon the enemy's first landing here, I wrote to Governor Trumbull, recommending him to throw over a body of 1000 men on the Island to annoy the enemy in the rear, if the state of the colony would admit of it. Whether it will be done I cannot determine. That colony having furnished a large proportion of men, I was, and still am, doubtful whether it could be done. If it could, I am satisfied it will, from the zeal and readiness they have ever shown to give every possible succour. I am hopeful they will be in a condition to do it; and if they are, those troops, I doubt not, will be ready and willing to give General Woodhull any assistance he may want. But cannot the militia effect what he wishes to do? They, I believe, must be depended on in the present instance for relief.

I have the honor to be, in great haste,

Sir, your most obedient servant,

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

The Hon. ABRAHAM YATES.

*Continuation of the correspondence by the Committee of Safety  
King's Bridge, Aug. 30th, 1776.*

Sir—In our way to Fishkill, agreeable to an adjournment of the convention, we are informed that the army on Long-Island is removed to the city of New-York ; and anxiety to know the fact, as well as to be informed whether you think any measures necessary for us to take, induces us to trouble your Excellency at this time for an answer hereto. We have ordered, last night, all the militia of the counties of Ulster, Dutchess, Orange and Westchester, to be ready, on a minute's warning, with five days' provisions. We shall wait the return of our messenger at this place, and are,

Sir, your most obed't and very humble serv't.

By order, ABRAHAM YATES, Jr.

His Excellency, Gen. WASHINGTON.

— August 30th, 1776.

Sir—Your favor of this date is just come to hand. Circumstanced as this army was, in respect to situation, strength, &c., it was the unanimous advice of a council of general officers, to give up Long-Island, and not by dividing our force, be unable to resist the enemy in any one point of attack. This reason, added to some others, particularly the fear of having our communication cut off from the main, of which there seemed to be no small probability, and the extreme fatigue our troops were laid under in guarding such extensive lines without proper shelter from the weather, induced the above resolution.

It is the most intricate thing in the world, sir, to know in what manner to conduct one's self with respect to the militia. If you do not begin many days before they are wanted to raise them, you cannot have them in time. If you do, they get tired and return, besides being under very little order or government whilst in service.

However, if the enemy have a design of serving us at this place, as we apprehend they meant to do on Long-Island, it might not be improper to have a body in readiness, to prevent or retard a landing of them east of Harlaem river, if need be.

In haste, and not a little fatigued,

I remain, with great respect and esteem,

Sir, your most obedient humble servant,

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

The Hon. ABRAHAM YATES, Esq.

*A List of the Field Officers and Captains of the New-York Troops, employed in the French War, in 1758, 59 and 60.*

## CHIEF COLONELS.

1758.	1759.	1760.
Oliver Delaney,	John Johnson,	none

## COLONELS.

Taylor Woolsey,	Berthol. Le Roux,	Berthol. Le Roux,
Beamsley Glacier,	Michael Thody,†	Isaac Corsa,
—————*	—————	Nath. Woodhull.

## LIEUT. COLONELS.

Charles Clinton,	Isaac Corsa,	George Brewerton,
Barthol. Le Rouse,	—————	Myndert Roseboom,
Isaac Corsa,	—————	Goosen Van Schaick.

## MAJORS.

Nath. Woodhull.	Myndert Roseboom,	John Paulding,
Michael Thody,	—————	Joshua Bloomer,
George Brewerton,	—————	Wm. W. Hoogan.

CAPTAINS—*Suffolk.*

Thomas Terry,	Gilbert Potter,	Israel Horton.
Elias Hand,	Barnabas Tuthill,	Jonathan Baker.
Gilbert Potter,‡	Stephen Sayre,	Jesse Platt.

*Queens.*

Richard Hulet,	Daniel Wright,	Daniel Wright.
Thomas Williams,	Richard Hulet,	Ephriam Mors.
Daniel Wright,	Ephriam Mors,	George Dunbar.

*Kings.*

Peter Stuyvesant,	—————	Isaac Middagh.
-------------------	-------	----------------

*Richmond.*

Thos. Arrowsmith,	Thos. Arrowsmith,	Anthony Waters.
-------------------	-------------------	-----------------

*New-York.*

Peter Dubois,	George Brewerton,	Nathaniel Hubble,
John McEvers,	Richard Smith,	Abm. De Forest,
Francis Moore,	Vandine Ellsworth,	Barnabas Byrnes.
George Brewerton,	Tobias Van Zant,	Francis Thody.

\* One Col., in 1758, and one Lieut. Col. and one Major, in 1759, are unknown.

† A number of these officers, as well as the subalterns and privates, also served in the revolutionary war, and the knowledge and experience they acquired in the French war, was of considerable service to the country, and a few of them joined the British.

‡ Jacob Smith, a brother of Jeffery Smith, esq., of Smithtown, a lieutenant in Capt. Potter's company, received a wound in the action at Ticonderoga, July 8th, 1758, of which he died the 15th, of whom Major Woodhull, in his letter to his father, says, he had behaved himself both like a soldier and a christian—his life was much desired, and his death is much lamented by all his acquaintance.

*Westchester.*

1758.	1759.	1760.
John Ver Plank,	William Gilchrist,	William Gilchrist,
Renben Lockwood,	James Holmes,	Jonathan Haight,
Jonathan Ogden,	Joshua Bloomer,	Henry Bayens,
Jonathan Fowler,	Jonathan Haight,	_____

*Dutchess.*

John Pawling,	John Pawling,	Richard Rhea,
William Humphrey,	Samuel Bladgley,	Jacobus Swartwout,
Samuel Bladgley,	Jacobus Swartwout,	Peter Harris,
Joseph Crane,	Richard Rhea,	John Van Ness.

*Orange.*

John P. Smith,	James Howell,	James Howell,
James Howell.	_____	_____

*Ulster.*

Ebenezer Seely,	James Clinton,	James Clinton,
Steph. Nottingham,	Corns. Van Beuren,	Corns. Wyncoop.

*Albany.*

Peter Yates,	Goosen Van Schaick	Stephen Schnyler,
Peter Conyne,	Peter Conyne,	Christopher Yates,
Lucas Van Veghten,	Philip Lansing,	Peter Bain,
Goosen Van Schaick	Hendrick Herkimer	_____
Guy Johnson.	_____	_____

*A List of field Officers and Captains of the Militia of Long-Island, who were in service in 1776.*

Captains Daniel Roe,	John Hulbert,
Daniel Griffin,	John Davis.

These captains, with their companies, were stationed at the east end of the Island, in the spring and summer of 1776, under the command of Col. Henry B. Livingston.

*Within the American lines at Brooklyn, August, 1776.*

Col. Josiah Smith,	Col. Jeromus Remsen,
Lieut. Col. John Sands,	Lt. Col. Nicholas Covenhoven.
Major Abraham Remsen,	Major Richard Thorne.

*Captains.*

John Wickes,	Benjamin Birdsall,
Nathaniel Platt,	David Laton,
Selah Strong,	John W. Seaman,
Ezekiel Mulford,	Daniel Rapelye,
Paul Reeve,	Andrew Onderdonk.



*Officers who were with Gen. Woodhull, Aug. 26th, 27th, and 28th, 1776.*

Major Jesse Brush; Capt. Alexander Ketcham; Lieut. Com. Jonah Wood; do. Stephen Abbott, of the Suffolk troops.

Capt. Ephraim Bayles, of the troops from Queens.

*Kings County troop of Horse.*

Capt. William Boerum, Lieut. Thomas Everit, Ensign Isaac Sebring.

*Queens County troop of Horse.*

Capt. Daniel Whitehead, Lieut. William Sacket.

*Sketch of Col. William Smith.*

Col. William Smith was born at Newton near Higham Ferrers, in Northamptonshire, in England, February 2d, 1655.

It seems that in his youth he was destined for the active scenes of life, and it is not probable that he received either a classical or legal education. He however possessed a vigorous mind, with a versatility of genius capable of attaining distinction in any employment to which it was applied.

The family probably were attached to the royal cause, as he seems to have been in great favor with Charles II., which was continued during the reigns of James II., William and Mary, and while he continued under queen Ann.

Charles II., in 1675, appointed him governor of Tangiers, which place, as well as Bombay, was given to him by the king of Portugal, as a part of the marriage portion of his wife, queen Catharine, the daughter of that king; and he probably at the same time gave him the commission of colonel, and the command of the troops necessary to protect an establishment on that barbarous coast.

It was intended to make Tangiers a place of trade, and to establish a colony there. The project, however, did not succeed; and in 1683 the place was abandoned, and Col. Smith returned to England.

After his return, he embarked in trade in London, and continued in business until he left the country.

It would also seem that Col. Smith was for a short time concerned in trade after his arrival in this country, and may have come over for that purpose. There is an entry of a note on the records of Brookhaven, bearing date April

23, 1690, given by Col. Thomas Dongan, the late governor of the province, to Col. Smith, for £99 3s., purporting to be for goods, in which the colonel is styled a merchant.

Col. Smith arrived with his family at New-York August 6th, 1686. He very early visited Brookhaven, and seems to have taken a fancy to a valuable neck of land there, called Little Neck, which was held in shares by various proprietors, who were in some dispute about the premises.

Governor Dongan aided him in effecting the purchase. He wrote to the proprietors, and recommended it to them to sell out to Col. Smith, as the best mode of terminating the controversy, to which a considerable proportion of them agreed; and on the 22d October, 1687, Col. Smith made his first purchase in Brookhaven.

In 1689, it is supposed, he removed to Brookhaven with his family, and took up his permanent residence there.

After his settlement at Brookhaven, Col. Smith made a purchase of a large tract of country, extending from the country road to the South Bay, and from the Fireplace river to Mastie river, to which the town assented, and which with his former purchases was erected into a manor, by the name of St. George's manor, by patent of Col. Fletcher in 1693; and subsequent to this he purchased all the lands unpurchased, lying between his former purchase and the bounds of Southampton, which were annexed to his manor by another patent of Col. Fletcher in 1697, whose grants to individuals were so extravagant, that several of them were annulled by an act of the colony legislature, under the succeeding administration.

Governor Slaughter arrived at New-York, March 19th, 1691, and on the 25th he appointed Col. Smith one of the members of the council; he also appointed him one of the commissioners of oyer and terminer, which tried and convicted Leisler and his associates.

The supreme court was established by an act of the legislature, May 6th, 1691; consisting of a chief justice, with a salary of £130; a second judge, with a salary of £100; and three other judges, without a salary. On the 15th, the governor and council appointed Joseph Dudley chief justice, Thomas Johnson the second judge, and Col. Smith, Stephen Van Cortland, and William Pinhorne the other judges. Col. Smith was at the same time appointed judge or delegate of the prerogative court for the county of Suffolk.

Col. Fletcher arrived and took upon him the government, August 29th, 1692.

November 11th, 1692, the seat of Joseph Dudley was vacated for non-residence, and Col. Smith was appointed chief justice in his room.

June 8th, 1693, Col. Smith was appointed to the command of the militia of Suffolk county, in place of Col. John Youngs, who had long held that office, but whose age rendered him incompetent any longer to discharge the duties required of him.

It is not known that Col. Smith took any part in politics under Leisler's administration; but he was one of the court that convicted him, and was on that account obnoxious to the party attached to Leisler.

April 2d, 1698, a new governor, the earl of Bellamont, arrived, and entered upon office. He immediately joined the friends of Leisler, and seems at once to have imbibed the feelings and resentments of the party, and was led by his zeal to gratify his friends, whose cause he had espoused, to lend his official patronage to prostrate their opponents, by removing them from all places of power and influence.

The majority of the council were anti-Leislerians; and his first effort was to change the political complexion of that body by removing such as were obnoxious to him, and introducing his favourites in their room. Wm. Nicolls was the first victim to the spirit of party; and the proscription was continued till his lordship had suspended more than half the members of the board.

October 30th, 1700, the governor removed Col. Smith from the office of chief justice, and appointed Stephen Van Cortland, the second judge, who belonged to the same party with Col. Smith, chief justice in his room.

January 8th, 1701, his lordship informed the council that he had received information that William Atwood was appointed or about to be appointed to the office of chief justice of the colony; and moved that the salary allowed to the chief justice should be suspended from the 25th of December preceding, in order that the same might be reserved from that time for the new chief justice.

The whole circumstances of the case, taken together, authorize a suspicion that the appointment of Atwood in England, to the office of chief justice, was effected by the intrigues of his lordship; that, at the time of the appointment of Van Cortland to the office, he was well apprized of the

probability of the success of his efforts; that he had the same hostility to Mr. Van Cortland as to Col. Smith; and that he cunningly adopted the course which he pursued, as the least exceptionable, to get rid of them both at the same time. Col. Smith's loyalty was so well known in England, and his standing with the ministry was probably such, that the governor durst not venture upon his removal from the council.

The earl Bellamont died March 5th, 1701. The lieutenant Governor, John Nanfan, was absent at Barbadoes at the time, and Col. Smith became president in virtue of his being the oldest member of the council; and he claimed the right to exercise the power of commander-in-chief, as incident to that station. This claim was opposed by the adherents of Leisler in the council, and denied by the assembly, a majority of whom were of the same party; and Smith states that this was afterwards the opinion of the lords of trade. Col. Smith, however, never exercised any of the executive duties, of the government, before the controversy was settled by the arrival of the lieutenant governor, the 19th of May ensuing.

The minutes of the supreme court, while chief justice Smith presided, from October 4th, 1693, to October 5th, 1700, are in the library of the Historical Society, in a good state of preservation.

August 4th, 1701, Atwood took the oath of office as chief justice, and the next day was qualified and took his seat as a member of the council.

The court then consisted of Wm. Atwood, chief justice, and of Abraham De Peister and Robert Walters, judges, and continued to be thus organized till Lord Cornbury's arrival, who entered on his administration May 3d, 1702. Lord Cornbury espoused the anti-Leislerian party; and Atwood, who was accused of perverting the law to prostrate a political opponent, in the case of Nicholas Bayard the March preceding, abandoned his seat and retired from the colony.

June 9th, 1702, the governor re-appointed Col. Smith to the office of chief justice, which he held till April, 1703.

April 5th, 1703, the governor informed the council that he had received a letter from the queen, appointing John Bridges, LL.D., the second judge, chief justice of the colony, upon which Doctor Bridges was qualified, and entered upon the office. Doctor Bridges held the office till July, 1704, when he died.



July 15th, 1704, Lord Cornbury appointed Roger Mompessor, chief justice, who was qualified, and entered upon the office ; and on the 5th of February, 1705, was appointed a member of the council, and was qualified and took his seat at the board.

Col. Smith continued a member of the council till his death. He attended his duty in the board May 11th, 1704. He died at his seat at St. George's manor, in Brookhaven, February 18th, 1705, in the 51st year of his age.

During the time Col. Smith held the office of chief justice, the colony was divided into rancorous parties, and the public measures were influenced by party spirit ; but he seems to have discharged the duties of his office with dignity and impartiality.

Col. Smith was married at Tangiers, November 6th, 1675, to Martha, the daughter of Henry Tunstall, esq., of Putney, in the county of Surry, in England, by whom he had six sons and seven daughters.

Mrs. Smith is said to have been a well bred lady, and eminently skilled in domestic economy. She survived her husband, and died September 1st, 1709.

Several of Col. Smith's descendants have been distinguished by public stations.

Henry Smith, his eldest son, was clerk of the county from 1710 to 1716, and for many years one of the judges of the court of common pleas of Suffolk county, and a delegate of the prerogative court for taking the proof of writs and granting letters testamentary and letters of administration for that county.

Col. William Smith, the son of Henry, and grandson of the judge, was clerk of the same county from 1730 to 1750, and was a judge of the county for several years before the revolution.

The Rev. Caleb Smith, a son of the judge's son William, and grandson of the Judge, graduated at Yale College in 1743, became a minister, and settled at Orange, a village about four miles from Newark, in New-Jersey. He preached the funeral sermon of President Burr, in 1757 ; and is said, by an intelligent correspondent, to have been "one of the greatest men of his day, eminent for his piety, learning and abilities."

William, son of the judge's son William, another grandson of Col. Smith, was a member of the provincial congress or convention from that county, in 1776 ; and on the organ-

ization of the state constitution, in April 1777, he was appointed one of the senators for the southern district, which seat he occupied till the end of the war.

His son, the late General John Smith, the great-grandson of Col. Smith, was a member of the convention of this state that adopted the constitution of the United States, was a member of the assembly from Suffolk county a number of years, then a member of the house of representatives, from which station he was elected by the legislature of the state of New-York to a seat in the senate of the United States ; and during the late war was appointed by the president and senate of the United States marshal of the district of New-York, which office he held at the time of his death.

Col. Smith's estate chiefly remains in the family. The best part of St. George's manor is now held in separate portions by William Smith, William Sidney Smith, and Thomas S. Strong, three of his great-grandsons.

---

*Sketch of William Nicolls, Esq.*

William Nicolls was the son of Matthias Nicolls, who was descended from an ancient and honourable family at Islip in Northamptonshire in England, and came over with Col. Richard Nicolls, who commanded the expedition which was sent to reduce the Dutch in New-York in 1664, and who was the governor of the colony under the Duke of York, until 1667.

Matthias Nicolls was a relation of the governor, and was by him appointed secretary of the colony and member of the council.

He was also authorized, by virtue of his office, to sit with the justices of the peace in the courts of sessions in the several ridings that were then organized. In 1672, he was mayor of the city of New-York. After the act of 1683, remodelling the courts of justice, he was appointed one of the judges of the colony. He officiated in his judicial capacity in Queens county, September 12th, 1687.

It is supposed that he died about the year 1690.

Matthias Nicolls made several purchases of valuable lands at Little Neck and Cow Neck, in Queens county. In 1687, he conveyed his lands at Little Neck to his son William, and those at Cow Neck were devised to him or descended to him. In 1719, William Nicolls conveyed his lands at Cow Neck to Joseph Latham, with a reservation of sixty

feet square, where he states "his father, Matthias Nicolls, lies buried."

It is supposed that William Nicolls was born in England, and came over a lad with his father in 1664. He received a legal education, and became a lawyer of good standing at the bar in New-York. He was clerk of Queens county in 1683, and held the office till 1688.

In 1684 he made a purchase of lands at Islip, in Suffolk county. After this period, he made several purchases of large tracts of land, adjoining his first purchase, the whole of which were confirmed in 1697 by a patent of Col. Fletcher, who was distinguished for his extravagant grants of the public lands.

In 1704, Mr. Nicolls became the proprietor of a tract of land on Shelter-Island, by virtue of a devise in the will of Giles Sylvester, comprehending a large proportion of that Island.

Mr. Nicolls was a warm friend of liberty, and friendly to the revolution in favour of William and Mary, but was opposed to the arbitrary and impolitic measures which were adopted by Leisler, rather it would seem to secure his authority than to advance the interests of the revolution.

In consequence of his disapprobation of the course pursued by Leisler, he imprisoned him and others who had courage and honesty enough to avow their sentiments relative to public affairs.

In March, 1691, Governor Slaughter arrived, called Leisler to account, liberated Nicolls and other state prisoners, and settled the foundations of the future government of the colony.

March 23d, the governor appointed Mr. Nicolls a member of the council.

In 1695, Mr. Nicolls was sent to England by the assembly, as the agent of the colony, in order to solicit the interference of the crown to enforce the contributions which had been allotted to the other colonies for the defence of the country against the encroachments of the French, which fell with unequal weight upon the colony of New-York; and for which they allowed him £1,000.

In 1698, he was suspended from the council by the new governor, the earl of Bellamont, who on his first arrival seems to have embraced the views and adopted the feelings of the Leislerian party, and exerted his official influence to crush their opponents.

In 1701, Mr. Nicolls was elected a member of assembly for the county of Suffolk; but not being at the time a resident of the county, as was required by law, he was not suffered to hold his seat.

To avoid a similar result, it is supposed that he then fixed his residence permanently on Great Neck, in Islip, which afterwards became the principal seat of the family.

In 1702, he was again elected a member of assembly for Suffolk, and was by the house elected to the speaker's chair.

He was from that time regularly elected a member of every succeeding assembly till his death, and by every assembly was elected their speaker. In 1718, he resigned the speaker's chair on account of his health, which seems wholly to have prevented his attendance a few of the last years of his life.

He was a member of assembly twenty-one years in succession, and speaker sixteen years of the time.

Mr. Nicolls was a lawyer of considerable distinction.

March 30th, 1691, Mr. Nicolls, with James Emmet and George Farrawell, were appointed king's council, to conduct the prosecution against Leisler and his associates.

He was one of the council employed by Nicholas Bayard in March, 1702, in his defence against a political prosecution instituted by John Nanfan, the lieutenant governor, and pursued with all the violence and bitterness of party rancour, for circulating and signing petitions to the king and parliament, in which the abuses of power by his honour and his friends were enumerated: a report of which case is published in the state trials of that year.

Mr. Nicolls was also one of the council employed in the defence of Francis McKemie, a presbyterian clergyman, in June, 1707, who was indicted for preaching, which was brought about by the bigotry of the governor, Lord Cornbury: a narrative of which is contained in a pamphlet published in New-York in 1755.

Mr. Nicolls was twice married. One of his wives was Anna Van Rensselaer, daughter of Jeremiah Van Rensselaer, esq., and widow of Killian Van Rensselaer, who was the heir of the original proprietor of the manor of Rensselaerwick.

Mr. Nicolls served in the assembly at a period when the colony was divided into bitter parties, and when a variety of interesting questions occurred between the governors



and assembly, which affected the rights and independence of the assembly. On all these questions, Mr. Nicolls was on the side of the assembly. He appears to have been uniformly friendly to the principles of freedom; and both in his professional and political employments seems to have been a firm and decided friend to the rights of the people and the best interests of the colony.

Mr. Nicolls died in 1723 or '24. He left a number of children; and several of his descendants have been distinguished by public stations. His eldest son, Benjamin, settled at Islip, and married Charity, a daughter of Richard Floyd, esquire,\* by whom he had two sons, William and Benjamin. He died young, and his widow married the Rev. Doctor Johnson, of Stratford, who was afterwards president of the college at New-York, under whose care her two sons received a liberal education; and they afterwards both received a legal education. William inherited the estate of his father, and remained at Islip; Benjamin settled in New-York, and acquired a distinguished rank at the bar.

William Nicolls the second, the second son of Mr. Nicolls, to whom he devised his estate on Shelter-Island, was educated a lawyer, and was a man of talents. He was a member of assembly for the county of Suffolk for twenty-nine years in succession, and during the last nine years was speaker of the house. He was first elected in 1739, and was re-elected a member of every succeeding assembly till his death.

It is supposed that he died in the spring of 1768. The governor, Sir Henry Moore, dissolved the assembly February 6th, 1768; and it is a tradition that he was taken sick on his journey home, and died at a house on Hempstead plains.

The second William Nicolls resembled his father in his political sentiments, and was a decided friend to the rights of the colonies. He is supposed to have concurred in the addresses to the king, lords, and commons, respectively, which were adopted by the assembly in 1764 and 1765, and which he signed as their speaker.

\* Richard Floyd, esquire, was for several years one of the judges of the county of Suffolk. He was the grandfather of the late General William Floyd, who was a delegate to the first Congress, and was continued a member during the greater part of the war, and was at the same time entitled to a seat in the senate of the state of New-York.

His biography in the history of the signers of the Declaration of Independence renders it improper to extend this note further, than to say that he was among the earliest, the most uniform, upright, and decided, of our revolutionary patriots; and that he continued to enjoy the gratitude, confidence, and esteem, of his fellow-citizens till his death. He died August 4th, 1821, aged 87.

These addresses abound with patriotic sentiments. In that of 1764, they say that "It would be the basest vassalage to be taxed at the pleasure of a fellow-subject." In that of 1765, they say that "An assumption of power by the British parliament to tax the colonies, if acquiesced in or admitted, would make them mere tenants at will of his majesty's subjects in Britain."

Wm. Nicolls the second died a bachelor, and his estate descended to William Nicolls the third, the eldest son of his brother, Benjamin Nicolls. William Nicolls the third was appointed clerk of the county of Suffolk in 1750, and continued to hold that office till his death in 1780. During the last four years of his life, the administration of justice was suspended by the war, and the office was without profit.

It is also said that Mr. Nicolls, some time before his death, laboured under a partial paralysis, which disqualified him for business. His last entry on the records was made November 8th, 1776.

In March, 1768, William Nicolls the third was elected a member of assembly for the county of Suffolk, with Eleazor Miller, to supply the vacancy occasioned by the death of his uncle. That assembly was dissolved January 2d, 1769.

Mr. Nicolls was again elected in March, 1769, with Col. Nathaniel Woodhull, a member for Suffolk.

This was the last assembly under the colony government, and continued until it was superseded by the provincial congress or convention, which met May 22d, 1775.

During the period of this assembly, the disputes between the mother country and the colonies arrived at a crisis.

The British parliament determined that their claim to tax the colonies at their pleasure should be exerted. The colonies exhausted every effort of remonstrance and supplication without effect; and no alternative was left but submission or resistance. Further delay was useless. The time for action had arrived; and the question whether the colonists were to be the vassals of the British parliament or to enjoy the rights of freemen, was to be decided by force. The prospect of a conflict so unequal, in which the result was so doubtful, staggered many who were friendly to the colonies. The occasion required all the zeal and energy of the most ardent patriotism. Col. Woodhull was qualified for the crisis, and met it without dismay; Mr. Nicolls was less energetic and decisive.

Mr. Nicolls, on several important political questions, that might be deemed tests of principle, that were agitated by that assembly, left his colleague and voted with the ministerialists.

Possibly he had flattered himself that the king and parliament would relinquish the claim to tax America, or would abandon its exercise ; and that, when he found the reverse to be the case, he was taken by surprise, and was unprepared for the event ; and that the caution and timidity of advanced years may have prompted him to adopt a course he believed adapted to delay, or to prevent what he may have apprehended would prove to be a fruitless contest with the overwhelming power of Britain.

Admitting that he was decided in his opposition to the measures of parliament, it must be conceded that he wanted the energy and boldness of his grandfather and uncle, either of whom, judging from the course they took on minor occasions, involving similar principles, would have been at the head of the opposition.

Wm. Nicolls the third left two sons, William and Benjamin. He devised his estate at Shelter-Island to his son Benjamin, who is now living, and his large estate of Islip to his son William ; which, with the exception of a few farms which the legislature of the state of New-York thought proper to take out of the course of the law, by limitations in his will, after passing three descents, continues undiminished in the hands of the elder branch of the family.

The limitation expired in the person of the late Wm. Nicolls, of Islip, deceased ; and, in consequence of his dying intestate, the estate descends to his three infant children, a son and two daughters, as tenants in common. This estate, on the arrival of these children at age, will have been in guardianship, with the exception of five years, for 40 years in succession.

---

SKETCH OF THE SEVERAL COURTS.

*Court of Assize, holden at New-York, October 6th, 1680.*

Present, the Right Hon. Sir EDMUND ANDROSS, *Governor.*

Matthias Nicolls,	} <i>Members of the Council.</i>
William Dyre,	
Frederick Flipson,	
William Darvall,	
Stephen Cortland,	

Francis Rumbout, *Mayor of the city of New-York.*

William Beekman,	}	<i>Aldermen.</i>
Thomas Lewis,		
Peter Jacobs,		
Gulian Ver Plank,		
Samuel Wilson,		

Richard Betts, *High Sheriff of Yorkshire.*

Thomas Topping,	}	<i>Justices of the East Riding.</i>
Isaac Arnold,		
Richard Woodhull,		
Jonas Wood,		

Thomas Willett, *Justice of the North Riding.*

James Hubbard,	}	<i>Justices of the West Riding.</i>
Elbert Elbertsen,		
John Palmer,		

Andrew Teller,	}	<i>Commissioners of Albany.</i>
Cornelius Van Dyke		

Thomas Delavall, *Justice of Esopus.*

Thomas Spaswill,	}	<i>Justices of New-Jersey.</i>
Nicholas Browne,		
Joseph Parker,		

John Gardiner, *Chief Justice of Nantucket.*

Cogear Knapton,	}	<i>Justices of Pemaquid.</i>
John West,		

*Special Court of Assize held at New-York, June 29th, 1681.*

Anthony Brockholst, *Commander in chief.*

Frederick Phillipse,	}	<i>Members of the Council.</i>
William Darvall,		
Stephen Cortland,		

John Van Brugh,	}	<i>Aldermen.</i>
Thomas Lewis,		
Peter Jacobs,		
Samuel Wilson,		
James Graham,		



John Youngs, *High Sheriff of Yorkshire.*

Thomas Topping,	}	<i>Justices of the East Riding.</i>
Richard Woodhull,		
Isaac Arnold,		
Jonas Wood,		

James Hubbard,	}	<i>Justices of the West Riding.</i>
Richard Betts,		
Elbert Elbertsen,		
Richard Stilwill,		

John Pell,	}	<i>Justices of the North Riding.</i>
Thomas Willet,		
Richard Cornwell,		
Thomas Hicks,		

Thomas Delavall, *Justice of Esopus.*

John West, *Justice of Pemaquid.*

*High Sheriffs of Yorkshire from 1665 to 1683.*

1665,	-	-	-	-	-	William Wells.
1669,	-	-	-	-	-	Robert Coe.
1672,	-	-	-	-	-	John Manning.
1675,	-	-	-	-	-	Sylvester Salisbury.
1676,	-	-	-	-	-	Thomas Willet.
1679,	-	-	-	-	-	Richard Betts.
1681,	-	-	-	-	-	John Youngs.

*Court of Oyer and Terminer under the act of 1683, held in Queens County, 1685.*

Matthias Nicolls,	}	<i>Judges.</i>
John Palmer,		

*Supreme Court under the act of May 6th, 1691, held in New-York, October 4th, 1693.*

William Smith, *Chief Justice.*

William Pinhorne,	}	<i>Judges.</i>
Stephen Courtland,		
Chidley Brooke,		
John Lawrence,		

*5th October, 1700.*

William Smith, *Chief Justice.*

Stephen Courtland,	}	<i>Judges.</i>
Abraham De Peyster,		

*A list of the Judges and Clerks of Kings, Queens and Suffolk, from 1665 to 1776, as far as they could be obtained.*

## FOR KINGS.

*Court of Sessions, under the Duke's Laws of 1665. June 16th, 1669.*

Matthias Nicolls, *Secretary, President.*

Cornelius Van Ruyven, *Counsellor.*

John Manning,	}	<i>Justices.</i>
James Hubbard,		
Richard Betts,		
		<i>7 Jurors.</i>

*Under the act of 1683. April 7th, 1685.*

Elbert Elbertson,	}	<i>Justices.</i>
Samuel Spicer,		
James Cortelleau,		
Ruloff Marten,		
		<i>13 Grand Jurors. 12 Jurors.</i>

*Under the Commission of Andross, of 1688. April 2d, 1689. Court of Sessions and Common Pleas.*

Stephen Van Cortland, *Judge of Court of "Pleas."*

James Cortelleau,	}	<i>Justices of the Quorum.</i>
William Morris,		
Gerardus Beekman,		
Nicholas Stillwell,		

*Under Law of May 6th, 1691, and under the Ordinance of May 15th, 1699.*

Gerardus Beekman, *Judge of Com. Pleas and the Justices.*  
*Judges.*

1715, Cornelius Sebring.

1718, Cornelius Van Brunt.

1720, Peter Stryker.

1722, Daniel Polhemus.

1724, Peter Cortilleau.

1729, Samuel Garretson.

1732, Ryck Suydam.

1739, Christopher Codwise.

1742, Johannes Lott.

1745, Abraham Lott.

1749, Isaac Sebring.

1752, Samuel Garretson, Barnabas Ryder, Charles DeBevois.

1761, Samuel Garretson, John Lefferts, Abraham Schenck.

1766, Samuel Garretson, John Lefferts, Cornelius Van Brunt.  
 1770, John Lefferts, Jeremiah Remsen, Philip Nagel.  
 1777, Engelbert Lott, Jeremias Vanderbelt, Theodorus Polhemus.

*Clerks of Kings.*

From 1671 to 1682, John West.  
 1682 to 1684, Peter Smith.  
 1684 to 1687, John Knight.  
 1687 to 1704, Jacobus Vanderwater.  
 1704 to 1715, Henry Filkin.  
 1715 to 1726, J. M. Sperling.  
 1726 to 1750, Adrian Hageman.  
 1750 to 1775, Simon Boerum.  
 1775 to 1777, John Rapelje.

FOR QUEENS.

*Court of Sessions, under the Duke's Laws, June 8th, 1675.*

Matthias Nicolls, *Secretary, President.*

Chidley Brooke, *Counsellor.*

Sylvester Salisbury, *High Sheriff, with the Justices of the county.*

*Under commission of Andross, of 1688, and act of May 6, 1691.*

*Judges of Common Pleas.*

From 1688 to 1699, Thomas Hicks.

*Under the Ordinance of 1699.*

From 1699 to 1703, John Coe.

1703 to 1710, Thomas Willet.

1710, Thomas Willet and John Jackson.

1723, Thomas Willet, Isaac Hicks.

1730, Isaac Hicks, David Jones, John Tallman.

1734, David Jones, John Messenger, James Hazard.

1738, David Jones, James Hazard, Thomas Hicks.

1740, James Hazard, Thomas Hicks, John Willet.

May, 1749, Thomas Hicks, John Willet, David Seaman.

Sept. 1749, Thomas Hicks, David Seaman, Joseph Sackett.

1756, Thomas Hicks, Jacob Smith, Penn Townsend.

1757, Thomas Hicks, Val. H. Peters, Penn Townsend.

From 1771 to 1774, Thomas Hicks, Valentine H. Peters.  
 Daniel Kissam.

*Clerks of Queens.*

From 1683 to 1688, William Nicolls.  
 1688 to 1702, Andrew Gibb.  
 1702 to 1710, Samuel Clows.  
 1710 to 1722, Joseph Smith.  
 1722 to 1757, Andrew Clark.  
 1757 to 1770, Whitehead Hicks.

## FOR SUFFOLK.

*Court of Sessions, under the Duke's Laws, March 6th, 1677.*

Matthias Nicolls, *Secretary, President.*

Thomas Willet, *Councillor.*

Thomas Baker,	} <i>Justices.</i>
John Topping,	
Isaac Arnold,	
Richard Woodhull,	

*Court of Common Pleas, under the Act of May 6th, 1691.*  
*March 28th, 1693.*

Isaac Arnold, *Judge, with the Justices.*

*Under the Ordinance of 1699.*

*Judges of the Common Pleas.*

1723, Henry Smith, Benjamin Youngs, Richard Floyd.  
 1729, Henry Smith, Benjamin Youngs, Samuel Hutchinson.  
 1738, Henry Smith, Joshua Youngs, Thomas Chatfield.  
 1744, Daniel Smith, Joshua Youngs, Thomas Chatfield.  
 1752, Richard Floyd, Elijah Hutchinson, Hugh Gelston.  
 1764, Richard Floyd, Samuel Landon, Hugh Gelston.  
 1771, William Smith, Samuel Landon, Hugh Gelston.  
 1773, William Smith, Samuel Landon, Isaac Post.  
 March 28th, 1775, William Smith, Samuel Landon, Isaac Post.

*Clerks of Suffolk.*

From 1669 to 1681, Henry Pierson.  
 1681 to 1692, John Howell.  
 1692 to 1709, Thomas Helme.  
 1709 to 1716, Henry Smith.  
 1716 to 1722, C. Congreve.  
 1722 to 1730, Samuel Hudson.  
 1730 to 1750, William Smith.  
 1750 to 1776, William Nicolls.



*Members of Assembly from Long-Island, during the colony  
Administration, from 1691 to 1775.*

FOR KINGS COUNTY.

Nicholas Stillwell,	-	-	from 1691 to 1693,	2 years.
John Poland,	-	-	" do to do	2
Coert Stuyvesant,	-	-	" 1693 to 1694,	1
Johannis Van Ecklen,	-	-	" 1693 to 1698,	5
Henry Filkin,	-	-	" 1694 to 1695,	1
Cornelius Sebring,	-	-	" 1695 to 1698,	3
Myendert Coerten,	-	-	" 1698 to 1699,	1
Gerardus Beekman,	-	-	" 1698 to 1699,	1
Cornelius Sebring,	-	-	" 1699 to 1726,	27
Cornelius Van Brunt,	-	-	" 1699 to 1716,	17
Samuel Garretsen,	-	-	" 1716 to 1737,	21
Richard Stillwell,	-	-	" 1726 to 1727,	1
Johannes Lot,	-	-	" 1727 to 1761,	34
Abraham Lot,	-	-	" 1737 to 1750,	13
Dominicus Vanderveer,	-	-	" 1750 to 1759,	9
Abraham Schenck,	-	-	" 1759 to 1767,	8
Simon Boerum,	-	-	" 1761 to 1775,	14
John Rapelje,	-	-	" 1767 to 1775,	7

*Member of the Council, Cornelius Van Ruyven.*

FOR QUEENS COUNTY.

Daniel Whitehead,	-	-	from 1691 to 1705,	14 years.
John Robinson,	-	-	" 1691 to 1693,	2
John Jackson,	-	-	" 1693 to 1709,	16
Jonathan Whitehead,	-	-	" 1705 to 1709,	4
John Tallman,	-	-	" 1709 to 1710,	1
John Townsend,	-	-	" 1709 to 1710,	1
John Jackson,	-	-	" 1710 to 1716,	6
Thomas Willet,	-	-	" 1710 to 1726,	16
Isaac Hicks,	-	-	" 1716 to 1739,	23
Benjamin Hicks,	-	-	" 1726 to 1737,	11
David Jones, (Speaker 13 years)*	-	-	" 1737 to 1759,	22
Thomas Cornell,	-	-	" 1739 to 1759,	20
Thomas Hicks,	-	-	" 1759 to 1761,	2

\* David Jones, esquire, was a son of Major Thomas Jones, of Fort Neck, in Oysterbay. He was for some years one of the judges of Queens county. He was elected a member of the assembly for that county in 1737, and was successively elected to the same station till 1758, and was speaker of the house during 13 years of that period; and, during the chief part, if not the whole of that time, conducted the correspondence with the agent of the colony at the court of Great Britain, on behalf of the assembly.

In 1758, he was appointed a judge of the supreme court, and continued to hold a seat on the bench till his death, October 11th, 1775, aged 76.

Judge Jones sustained the reputation of a man of solid parts, and discharged the duties of the various stations which he held with ability and success.

Thomas Cornell, - - - from 1761 to 1764, 3 years.  
 Zebulon Seaman, - - - " 1759 to 1775, 16  
 Daniel Kissam, - - - " 1764 to 1775, 11

*Member of Council.*

Thomas Willet, - - - from 1677 to 1692.

FOR SUFFOLK COUNTY.

Col. Henry Pierson,	from 1691 to 1695,	4 years—speaker
Mathew Howell,	" 1691 to 1693,	2 [1 year.
John Tuthill,	" 1693 to 1694,	1
Mathew Howell,	" 1694 to 1705,	11
John Tuthill,	" 1695 to 1698,	3
Henry Pierson,	" 1698 to 1701,	3
William Nicolls,	" 1702 to 1723,	21 Speaker 16
Samuel Mulford,	" 1705 to 1726,	21 [years.
Epenetus Platt,	" 1723 to 1739,	16
Samuel Hutchinson,	" 1726 to 1737,	11
David Pierson,	" 1737 to 1748,	11
Eleazer Miller,	" 1748 to 1768,	20
William Nicolls 2d,	" 1739 to 1768,	29 Speaker 9
Eleazer Miller,	" 1768 to 1769,	1 [years.
William Nicolls 3d,	" 1768 to 1769,	1
Nathaniel Woodhull,	" 1769 to 1775,	6
William Nicolls 3d,	" 1769 to 1775,	6

*Members of the Council.*

Col. John Youngs, from 1683 to 1698,  
 Col. William Smith, " 1691 to 1704,  
 William Nicolls " 1691 to 1698.

*Representatives for Long-Island in the first Convention—in the Provincial Congress—in the Senate and Assembly of the State of New-York, and in the Continental Congress, during the Revolutionary War.*

The deputies for Long-Island to the convention which met at the city of New-York April 10th, 1775, to choose delegates to the Continental Congress, were as follows:

*Suffolk.*—William Floyd, Nathaniel Woodhull, Phineas Fanning, Thomas Tredwell, and John Sloss Hobart.

*Queens.*—Jacob Blackwell and John Tallman.

*Kings.*—Simon Boerum, Richard Stilwell, Theodorus Polhemus, Denise Denise, and John Vanderbelt.

Soon after the convention was dissolved, on a recommendation from New-York, the several counties appointed dele-

gates to meet and form a Provincial Congress to co-operate with the Continental Congress in such measures as they should devise for the public good.

These delegates met at New-York, May 22d, 1775, and continued with some new appointments to meet from time to time at different places, till the adoption of the State Constitution in April 1777.

During this period, or the greater part of it, the colony government was dissolved; the whole powers of sovereignty devolved on the people, and were exercised by their representatives in the Provincial Congress.

The Provincial Congress, by virtue of their representative capacity merely, without any constitution, guide or control, but their own views of the public interests, performed all the duties and exercised the powers of a regularly constituted legislature.

The members of the Provincial Congress for Long-Island were as follows:

*Suffolk*—Nathaniel Woodhull, John Sloss Hobart, Thomas Tredwell, John Foster, Ezra L'Hommedieu, Thomas Wickham, James Havens, Selah Strong, William Smith, David Gelston, Mr. Dering.

*Queens*—James Blackwell, Samuel Townsend, Jonathan Lawrence, Joseph Robinson, James Townsend, Walter Smith, Mr. VanWyck, Abraham Kettletas.

*Kings*—Henry Williams, Jeremiah Remsen, Mr. Polhemus, Mr. Lefferts.

After the 30th of August, 1776, when the Island was abandoned by the American army, such of the members only attended as had left the Island.

By an ordinance passed by the convention who framed the state constitution, April 20th, 1777, it was provided that that part of the state which had fallen into the hands of the enemy should be represented in the senate and assembly by a proportional number of members selected from those who had retired from those counties within the American lines.

The following persons were selected for this purpose from the several counties on Long-Island, and held their seats till the end of the war:

*Senators*—William Floyd, William Smith, Jonathan Lawrence.

*Assemblymen for Suffolk*—Burnet Miller, David Gelston, Ezra L'Hommedieu, Thomas Tredwell, Thomas Wickes.

*For Queens*—Philip Edsell, Daniel Lawrence, Benjamin Coe, and Benjamin Birdsell.

*For Kings*—William Boerum and Henry Williams.

The members of Congress from Long-Island during some period of the war were William Floyd, Simon Boerum, Ezra L'Hommédien.

*Population of Long-Island at different periods.*

A. D.	1731	1771	1786	1790	1800	1810	1820
Kings,	2150	3623	3986	4495	5740	8303	11187
Queens,	7895	10980	13084	16014	16983	19336	20519
Suffolk,	7675	13128	13793	16440	19444	21113	24272
Total—	17820	27731	30863	36949	42167	48752	55968

*Population of the several towns.*

KINGS COUNTY.							1810	1820
Brooklyn, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	4402	7175
Bushwick, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	798	930
Flatbush, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	1159	1027
Flatlands, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	517	512
Gravesend, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	520	534
New-Utrecht, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	907	1009
							8303	11187
QUEENS COUNTY.							1810	1820*
Newtown, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	2437	
Jamaica, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	2110	
Flushing, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	2230	
North-Hempstead, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	2750	
Hempstead, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	5084	
Oysterbay, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	4725	
							19336	20519
SUFFOLK COUNTY.							1810	1820
East Hampton, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	1480	1646
South Hampton, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	3899	4229
Shelter Island, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	329	389
Brook Haven, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	4176	5218
Islip, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	885	1156
Huntington, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	4425	4935
Smithtown, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	1592	1874
Riverhead, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	1711	1857
Southold, -	-	-	-	-	-	-	2613	2968
							21113	24272

\* The Deputy who took the last census, omitted to distinguish the population of the several towns in Queens County.



*Proportion of white Males to Females.*

	MALES.	FEMALES.
Kings, - - - - -	5096	4514
Queens, - - - - -	9643	9040
Suffolk, - - - - -	11761	11250
	<hr/>	<hr/>
	26500	24804, as 13 to 12

*Employment of Males over 16 years of age.*

	Agriculture.	Commerce.	Manufactures.
Kings, - - - - -	840	81	713
Queens, - - - - -	4130	102	1119
Suffolk, - - - - -	4642	342	1099
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
	9612	525	2931
Total males over 16, - - - - -	-	-	14180
Employed in agriculture, commerce and manufactures, 13068			
Unemployed, - - - - -	-	-	1112

*Proportion of Population of Long-Island to the city of New-York.*

	Long-Island.	City.
1731, - - - - -	17820	8628, as 2 to 1
1771, - - - - -	27731	21163,
1786, - - - - -	30863	23614,
1790, - - - - -	36949	33131,
1800, - - - - -	42167	60489,
1810, - - - - -	48752	96373, as 1 to 2
1820, - - - - -	56978	123000, as 1 to 2 $\frac{1}{3}$

*Proportion of Population of Long-Island to the State of New-York.*

	Long-Island.	State.
1731, - - - - -	17820	50291, as 1 to 3
1771, - - - - -	27731	163338, as 1 to 6
1786, - - - - -	30863	238896, as 1 to 7
1790, - - - - -	36949	340120, as 1 to 9
1800, - - - - -	42167	586141, as 1 to 14
1810, - - - - -	48752	959049, as 1 to 19
1820, - - - - -	56978	1372812, as 1 to 24

*Proportion of Population of the State of New-York to the United States.*

	New-York.	United States.
1790, - - - - -	340120	3950000, as 1 to 11
1800, - - - - -	686050	5305666, as 1 to 9
1810, - - - - -	959049	7230514, as 1 to 7
1820, - - - - -	1372812	9654415, as 1 to 7

*Valuation of the several towns in the counties of Kings,  
Queens and Suffolk, in 1823.*

KINGS.—	Brooklyn, - - - -	\$2389899
	Flatbush, - - - -	422523
	Flatlands, - - - -	196704
	Bushwick, - - - -	257378
	New-Utrecht, - - - -	304954
	Gravesend, - - - -	196047
		<hr/>
		\$3705675
QUEENS—	Oysterbay, - - - -	\$1575550
	Hempstead, - - - -	1017000
	North-Hempstead, - - - -	1165250
	Flushing, - - - -	993200
	Newtown, - - - -	890780
	Jamaica, - - - -	698800
		<hr/>
		\$6340580
SUFFOLK.—	East-Hampton, - - - -	\$464060
	South Hampton, - - - -	960305
	Shelter-Island, - - - -	105640
	South Old, - - - -	534920
	River Head, - - - -	267380
	Brook Haven, - - - -	969500
	Smith Town, - - - -	320078
	Huntington, - - - -	811480
	Islip, - - - -	279349
		<hr/>
		\$4712712

*Proportion of the valuation of Kings, Queens and Suffolk  
to the State, 1821.*

Kings, - - -	\$3513164
Queens, - - -	5876775
Suffolk, - - -	4889464 whole state.

---

\$14279413 \$241283532, as 1 to 16

NOTE.— By the state census of 1825, the population of the state is 1,616,458; city of New-York 166,086; Long-Island 58,705, proportion to the state as 1 to 27.

OF THE CLIMATE OF LONG-ISLAND.

The influence of the sea which surrounds it, renders it more temperate than places in the same parallel of latitude in the interior. In the summer, it is regularly fanned by a

sea breeze, which generally rises in the afternoon, but sometimes before; and extends more or less across the Island, according to the strength and continuance of the wind. These breezes have become so common in the winter, as to prevent the snow from covering the ground for any considerable length of time.

The west and south-west winds predominate in more than half the months in the year—the thermometer seldom sinks below zero in winter, and seldom rises higher than 90 degrees in summer. The mean temperature is about 51 degrees, which is the temperature of the springs and deep wells, and the weather is clear more than half the year.\*

The temperature at Huntington, which lies in lat. about 40d. 52m. midway between the latitude of the east and west ends of the Island, will give pretty nearly the average temperature of the whole Island.

\* The temperature of places in the same latitude, is modified by the elevation of the land, the state of cultivation, by their proximity to the sea, or large bodies of water that do not freeze, and by the courses of the predominant winds.

The temperature of the air decreases in the same latitude one degree, for about every 590 feet of the elevation of the place above the level of the sea. The elevation of Mexico, which is 7217 feet above the level of the sea, in latitude 19°, 18, reduces the temperature to that of places in latitude 33, 30, on a level with the sea.

The United States are not as elevated above the level of the sea as Europe, and the difference is in favor of a milder temperature in the United States.

The climate of the United States has been estimated to be from 10 to 15 degrees colder, than the corresponding latitudes in Europe. From the description of the climate of France and Italy, by the Roman writers a few years before the Christian era, the temperature of those countries could not then have been materially different from that of the United States at present. Their rivers were frozen solid, and the earth was covered with snow, more or less of the winter. Experience proves, that rivers do not congeal with any considerable solidity, until the thermometer is as low as 20; and in the United States, in the latitude of Italy, the thermometer at present is seldom below 20, more than a few days together during the winter. To produce the effects described, must have required quite as severe frost, as now prevails in the same latitude in the United States, if not more severe; and the same causes that have produced the change in the climate there, will have the same effect here, so far as they are common to both countries.

The clearing and the cultivation of the country, is the most powerful cause that has contributed to this effect, and will have great influence in meliorating the climate of the United States. The timber which covers an uncultivated country, shields it from the rays of the sun, and deprives the earth of the heat derived from that source. It is proved by experiment, that the temperature of cleared land is 10 degrees greater than that of land covered with timber.

Evaporation and rain are sources of cold, and are more abundant in a country covered with timber, than in a cleared country—more moisture is supposed to evaporate from the leaves, of a given quantity of green timber, than from the same extent of water. Great evaporation produces frequent rains, and these again produce evaporation; and the reciprocal operation of these causes contributes to cool the earth, and reduce the temperature of the atmosphere. The influence of these causes is lessened by cultivation; the earth becomes drier and warmer, and the temperature of the air is increased. The air from the sea also has a powerful effect on the climate—the sea is 8 or 10 degrees warmer in winter, and cooler in summer than the earth; and in proportion as the country is cleared, the air from the sea penetrates further into the country—moderates the heat in summer, and the cold in winter, and operates to render the temperature of the seasons more mild and uniform. The air from the great lakes must have a corresponding effect on the adjoining country—must modify the temperature of the opposite seasons of heat and cold, and meliorate the climate.

The climate is also affected by the course of the winds; formerly on Long-Island, the north-west was the predominant wind in the winter months, and the north-east wind generally prevailed in the spring, and sometimes in the fall; at present the west and south-west winds are the predominant winds, more than half the months in the year. These winds either come from the sea, or blow over a country less cold than that traversed by the north-west and north-east winds, and are more temperate than those winds were. The climate is evidently undergoing a change, and becoming more uniform; the winters are not as cold, nor the summers as hot as they formerly were.

*The mean temperature of the several months in the year.*

From 1st Sept. 1821, to 1st Sept. 1822.				From 1st Sept. 1823, to 1st Sept. 1824.			
September,	-	-	69	-	-	-	62
October,	-	-	54	-	-	-	51
November,	-	-	42	-	-	-	39
December,	-	-	31	-	-	-	35
January,	-	-	26	-	-	-	34
February,	-	-	29	-	-	-	32
March,	-	-	24	-	-	-	36
April,	-	-	49	-	-	-	49
May,	-	-	63	-	-	-	57
June,	-	-	65	-	-	-	69
July,	-	-	75	-	-	-	74
August,	-	-	71	-	-	-	70
<hr/>				<hr/>			
51,20				50,40			

*Greatest heat, and greatest cold, at Huntington.*

1822, July 4th,	94	1822, Jan. 5th,	5 below zero.
do 20,	94	do 14,	4 do
1824, July 10,	90	do 24,	at zero.
18,		do 25,	2 below.
31,		1824, Dec. 18,	11 above zero.
Aug. 22,	90	Feb. 5,	3 do
Greatest range of	{	1822, -	- 98
the thermometer,		1824, -	- 94

*Predominant Winds at Huntington.*

From 1st Sept. 1821, to 1st Sept. 1822.		From 1st Sept. 1823, to 1st Sept. 1824.	
September,	west.	September,	east.
October,	west.	October,	south-west.
November,	west.	November,	do.
December,	west.	December,	west.
January,	south-west.	January,	west.
February,	do.	February,	south-west.
March,	do.	March,	east.
April,	east.	April,	south-west.
May,	south-west.	May,	do.
June,	west.	June,	do.
July,	south-west.	July,	west.
August,	do.	August,	south-west.



Courses of Winds.				Courses of Winds.			
North,	-	-	14	North,	-	-	18
North-west,	-	-	24	North-west,	-	-	60
North-east,	-	-	36	North-east,	-	-	36
East,	-	-	48	East,	-	-	52
South-east,	-	-	21	South-east,	-	-	22
South,	-	-	26	South,	-	-	25
South-west,	-	-	102	South-west,	-	-	91
West,	-	-	94	West,	-	-	61
<hr/>				<hr/>			
365				365			

*State of the weather for 455 days, from 1st Sept. 1821.*

Clear,	-	-	-	-	-	-	270
Cloudy,	-	-	-	-	-	-	113
Rainy,	-	-	-	-	-	-	51
Snow,	-	-	-	-	-	-	21—455

*Temperature of Wells in Huntington, 15th August, 1823,  
water from 4 to 6 feet deep.*

Depth.	Temperature at bottom.				Surface.
10	-	-	-	-	65
16	-	-	-	-	57
25	-	-	-	-	53
43	-	-	-	-	50
Boiling Springs,				-	51*

An extract from the power of attorney, granted to James Farret, by William, Earl of Stirling, April 20th, in the 12th year of Charles I.

The power, after reciting that the earl had obtained a patent from the corporation for New-England, by the consent and command of the King, bearing date April 22d, in the 11th year of his reign, for a certain Island called Long-Island, with the Islands adjacent, and that he was desirous of improving them, states that he had appointed James Farret to be his attorney or agent to take possession of the said Islands, and to plant and improve them, and after some other recitals, proceeds as follows:

“I, the said William, Earl of Stirling, do hereby impower and authorize him for me, my heirs, executors and administrators, and for every of us, to let, set, mortgage, sell, or by any other way or means, for a present, sum or sums of money,

\* For the meteorological observations of the town of Huntington, I am indebted to the kindness of Christopher Meng, esq., of that town.

or for yearly rent, to dispose of the said Islands, or of any part or parts of them, for such time or times, term or terms of years, for life, or lives, or forever in fee, as my said attorney or agent shall judge most probably conducing to my profit and behalf, and to the other ends before specified.

And after one or more plantations, or colonies or people shall be there in any or all of the aforesaid Islands, settled, to continue, erect and establish, such honest and wholesome orders and ordinances amongst and for the benefit of the said planters and colonies, as shall be judged, together with and upon the advice of the Right Worshipful John Winthrop, esq., governor of Boston colony, in the said New-England, most tending to the preservation of the public peace, the improvement of trade and commerce, and the due execution of justice, in obedience to the laws of God, and as much as may be agreeable to the laws of England."

The power authorizes the conveyance of the said lands to any person or persons that owed allegiance to the crown of England, and engages to ratify and confirm what his said attorney shall do in conformity with the said power in the premises.

---

*Treaty of Hartford, 1650.*

Articles of agreement made and concluded at Hartford, upon Connecticut, September 19, 1650, between delegates of the Commissioners of the United English Colonies, and the delegates of Peter Stuyvesant, governor general of New Netherlands—concerning the bounds and limits between the English United Colonies and the Dutch province of New Netherlands.

*We agree and determine as follows:*

That upon Long-Island, a line run from the westernmost part of Oysterbay, and so in a straight and direct line to the sea, shall be the bounds between the English and Dutch there, the easterly part to belong to the English, and the westernmost part to the Dutch.

The bounds upon the main, to begin upon the west side of Greenwich bay, being about four miles from Stamford, and so to run a westerly line 20 miles up into the country, and after, as it shall be agreed by the two governments of the Dutch and New Haven, provided that said line run not within ten miles of Hudson's river, and it is agreed that the Dutch shall not, at any time hereafter, build any house or

habitation within six miles of the said line. The inhabitants of Greenwich to remain (till further consideration thereof be had,) under the government of the Dutch.

That the Dutch shall hold and enjoy all the lands in Hartford that they are actually in possession of, known or set out by certain marks and bounds, and all the remainder of the said lands, on both sides of Connecticut river, to be and remain to the English there.

And it is agreed, that the aforesaid bounds and limits, both upon the Island and main, shall be observed and kept inviolable, both by the English of the United Colonies and all the Dutch nation, without any encroachment or molestation, until a full determination be agreed upon in Europe by mutual consent of the two States of England and Holland. And in testimony of our joint consent to the several foregoing conditions, we have hereunto set our hands this 19th day of September 1650.

SIMON BRADSTREET,	THOMAS WILLET,
THOMAS PRINCE,	GEORGE BAXTER.

---

*The remonstrance of the several towns in the Dutch territory,  
to the Governor and council, in 1653.*

To the Hon. Director General and council in New Netherlands, together to the council of the high and mighty Lords, the States General of the United Provinces,

The humble remonstrance and petition of the colonies and villages in the Province of New Netherland, humbly shew :

We acknowledge a paternal government, which God and nature have established in the world, for the maintenance and preservation of peace, and the welfare of men, not only principally in conformity to the laws of nature, but according to the law and precepts of God, to which we consider ourselves obliged by his word, and therefore submit to it.

The Lord our God having invested their high mightinesses, the States General as his ministers, with the power to promote the welfare of their subjects, as well of those residing within the United Provinces, as of those at this side of the sea, which we gratefully acknowledge, and having commissioned in the same view, some subaltern magistrates, and clothed them with authority to promote the same end, as are the Lords Directors of the privileged West India Com-

pany, whom we acknowledge as Lords and Patroons of this place, next to your Lordships, as being their representatives.

On which ground we humbly conceive that our rights and privileges are the same, in every respect, in harmony with those of Netherland, as being a member dependent on that state, and by no means a conquered subjugated nation.

We settled here on a mutual agreement and contract with the Lord Patroons, with the consent of the natives, who were the first proprietors of these lands, of whom we purchased the soil at our own expense, and transformed a wilderness, with immense labor, into a few small villages and many cultivated farms, encouraged by the privileges which we obtained, and whose preservation is dear to us.

We expected their increase and amplification, and by no means that these were to be curtailed down to this.

The deep homage and profound respect which we feel for the government of the United Netherlands, consisting and coagulated from various nations from different parts of the world: That, we leaving, at our own expense, our country and countrymen, voluntarily choose to submit to their protection, and being now immatriculated in their body under our sovereign, the high and mighty Lords, the States General, whom we acknowledge as our liege lords, and submit as in duty bound, to the General laws of the United Provinces in the Netherlands, with all such new orders and laws which, under their authority, may be published here, agreeably to the custom and privilege of the Netherlands.

This being considered, we humbly solicit that this our remonstrance and petition, may be received and well construed, without being misinterpreted.

Wherefore, although with all humility, we will declare freely our anxious fears by which we some time since have been alarmed and discouraged in our labors and callings, so that it is not in our power to act with that rigor and affection in promoting the welfare of our country as well as before, although in a wilderness, for the following reasons.

1. Our apprehension to see an arbitrary government established among us, which is contrary to the first intention and genuine principles of every well regulated government, to wit: that one or more should arrogate the exclusive power to dispose arbitrarily of the life and property of any individual, and this in virtue or under pretext of a law or order which he might fabricate, without the consent, know-



ledge, or approbation of the whole body, their agents or representatives.

Thus new laws relative to the lives and property of the inhabitants, contrary to the privileges of the Netherlands, and odious to every free-born man, and principally so to those whom God had placed under a free government on new settled lands, who are entitled to claim laws which are as near resembling those of Netherland as possible.

It is our humble opinion that it is one of our privileges, that in making new laws, our explicit consent, or that of our representatives, is unavoidably required for their adoption.

2. Casually we are every year full of apprehension that the natives of the land may commence a new war against us, by the murders they commit under the pretext that they have not been paid for their land, which creates many calamities and discourages settlers, and even contributes to lessening the number and industry of the remainder.

It has, thus far, not been in our power to discover the truth hereof, or ascertain to what tribe these murderers belong. It is too often disregarded as committed by savages who reside at a considerable distance. But, be that as it may, it fills us with daily anxiety, so that we are compelled to look out for our own defence, as we cannot discover in what manner our lives and property shall be protected, except by our own means.

3. That officers and magistrates, although personally, from their qualifications, deserving similar offices, are appointed contrary to the laws of the Netherlands, to many offices, without consent or nomination of the people, which nevertheless are the most concerned in the choice.

4. That many orders and proclamations made before, without approbation of the country in the days of yore, by the authority of the Director General and council, either of former days or actually ruling, which remain obligatory, although we are ignorant of their force, and become transgressors from ignorance without knowing it, by which we are exposed to many dangers and troubles, and may occasion our own ruin without knowing it.

5. On the promises of grants and general letters of privileges and exemptions, various plantations have been made at a great expense of the inhabitants in building their houses, making fences, &c., the cultivation of the land, and principally so by those of Middleburgh, and Middlewout, with their neighborhoods and other places.

Many single farms were taken up by persons who solicited a deed of such a grant, but were always delayed and disappointed, to their great loss, which creates a suspicion that some innovations are in contemplation, or that there is a lurking intention to alter former stipulations.

6. That to some individuals, large quantities of land are granted for their private profit, on which a large village of 20 or 30 families might have been established, which, in the end, must effect an immense loss to the Patroons, with regard to their revenues, as well now as in future, and which must weaken the strength of the province, and disable that part of the country to provide in or contribute to its defence, and that of its inhabitants, except we or our commonalty are enabled to effect it.

7. As we exert ourselves to reduce all our griefs within six points, which we confidentially explained, as we renew our allegiance, in the hope that these will soon be redressed, agreeably to the privileges of our country, when all discontents shall cease, a mutual harmony be restored, and our anxiety relieved.

We apply, therefore, to your wisdom to heal our sicknesses and pains. We shall remain thankful, and consider any further application needless, as we otherwise should be compelled to do.

Upon which, humbly soliciting your honors' answer on every point or article in such a manner that we may remain satisfied, or proceed further, &c., as God shall direct our steps.

Your honors' suppliant servants.

Done Dec. 11, 1653.

ARENT VAN HATTEN,	}	<i>New-York.</i>
MARTIN CREIGER,		
P. L. VANDER GIRST,		
FREDERICK LUBBERTSON,	}	<i>Brooklyn.</i>
PAULUS VANDER BEEK,		
WILLIAM BEEKMAN,		
JOHN HICKS,	}	<i>Flushing.</i>
TOBIAS FEEKS,		
WILLIAM WASHBORN,		
JOHN SOMERS,	}	<i>Hempstead.</i>
PETER WOLPHERTON,		
JAN STRYKER,		
THOMAS PENEWIT,	}	<i>Flatlands.</i>
ELBERT ELBERTSON,		
THOMAS SPICER,		
GEORGE BAXTER,	}	<i>Flatbush.</i>
JAMES HUBBARD,		
ROBERT COE,		
THOMAS HAZARD,	}	<i>Gravesend.</i>
	}	<i>Newtown.</i>

## MISCELLANEOUS PAPERS ALLUDED TO IN THE TEXT.

*The original social contract of the people of East Hampton, adopted in 1655.*

Forasmuch as it has pleased the Almighty God, by the wise dispensation of his providence so to order and dispose of things, that we, the inhabitants of East Hampton, are now dwelling together; the word of God requires that to maintain the peace and union of such a people, there should be an orderly and decent government established, according to God, to order and dispose as occasion shall require; we do therefore sociate and conjoin ourselves and successors, to be one town or corporation, and do for ourselves and successors, and such as shall be adjoined to us at any time hereafter, enter into combination and confederation together, to maintain and preserve the purity of the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, which we now possess; as also the discipline of the church, which according to the truth of said Gospel, is now practised among us; as also in our civil affairs, to be guided and governed by such laws and orders as shall be made according to God, and which by the vote of the major part, shall be in force among us. Furthermore, we do engage ourselves, that in all votes for choosing officers or making orders, that it be according to conscience and our best light. And also we do engage ourselves by this combination to stand to and maintain the authority of the several officers of the town in their determinations and actions, according to their orders and laws, that either are or shall be made, not swerving therefrom. In witness whereof, &c.\*

*Original Dutch Grant for Jamaica.*

Having seen the request or desire of the inhabitants of the town of Hempstead, and subjects of the province, the governor general and council have consented and granted unto the aforesaid inhabitants, free leave to erect or build a new town according unto their place limited, named *Canarise*, about the midway from Hempstead, upon such privileges and particular ground briefs, such as the inhabitants of the New-Netherlands generally do possess in their lands, and

\* The first settlers of the several towns in Connecticut seem to have entered into formal contracts of this nature. The preceding is said to have been taken from that of Windsor, and it is probable that the several English towns on Long-Island, in their origin, more or less, formerly adopted similar compacts.

likewise in the choice of their magistrates as in the other villages or towns, as Middleborough, Breuklin, Midwout and Amersfort.

Done at the fort in New-Netherland, this }  
21st of March, 1656. }

PETER STUYVESANT.

By order of the governor general and council of the New-Netherlands.

CORNELIUS VAN RUYVEN, *Secretary*.

TRANSACTIONS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF CONNECTICUT,  
RELATIVE TO LONG-ISLAND.

At a session of the general assembly at Hartford, March 10th, 1663.

This court have voted Mr. Wyllis and Mr. Matthew Allyn, to go over to Long-Island to settle government on the west end of the Island, according to the agreement at Hempstead, in February last; and those gentlemen are desired to issue the matter twixt I. Scott and Bloomer, and they are further desired to take in with them the assistance of the commissioners in those towns, for the regulating of any disturbances as occasion is presented.

A true copy from the public records of the colony of Connecticut. Examined this 8th day of August, 1664, by

GEORGE WYLLYS, *Secretary*.

By order of the governor general and council of the New Netherlands.

At a general assembly held at Hartford, May the 12th, 1664, for election,

Whereas, his Majesty hath been graciously pleased to confirm unto this colony, by charter, all that part of his dominions in New-England, bounded, as in the said charter is expressed, with the Islands adjoining.

This court doth declare, that they claim Long-Island for one of those adjoining Islands, expressed in the charter, except a precedent right doth appear, approved by his Majesty.

This court doth desire and request the worshipful governor, Mr. Matthew Allyn, Mr. Wyllys, and Captain Youngs, to go over to Long-Island, and to settle the English plantations on the Island, under this government, according to instructions given them.

The aforesaid committee are hereby authorized to erect and constitute quarter courts, or appoint other fit seasons



for the keeping of court, for the administration of justice, that all cases may be tried according to law, (life, limbs and banishment excepted,) and to do their endeavors so to settle matters, that the people may be both civilly, peaceably and religiously governed in the English plantations, so as they may win the heathen to the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, by their sober and religious conversation, as his Majesty our Lord and King requires in his gracious letters patent, granted to his subjects here, in this colony; and in case of crimes of a capital nature, they are to have liberty to take the opportunity of the courts of Fairfield or Hartford, the like liberty they have in case of review. They may also give oath to those who are accepted by this court for freemen on the Island, and to do what else they judge may conduce for the good of the colony.

A true copy from the public records of the colony of Connecticut. Examined this 8th day of August, 1764, by  
 GEORGE WYLLIS, *Secretary*.

*The annexation of Long-Island to New-York.*

The determination of his Majesty's commissioners relative to the boundaries of his Royal Highness the Duke of York's patent, and of the patent of Connecticut, November 30th, 1664.

By virtue of his Majesty's commission, we have heard the difference about the bounds of the patents granted to his Royal Highness the Duke of York, and his Majesty's colony of Connecticut; and having deliberately considered all the reasons alledged by Mr. Allen, senior, Mr. Gould, Mr. Richards and Captain Winthrop, appointed by the assembly held at Hartford, the 13th day of October, 1664, to accompany John Winthrop, Esq., the Governor of his Majesty's colony of Connecticut to New-York, and by Mr. Howell and Captain Youngs of Long-Island, why the said Long-Island should be under the government of Connecticut, which are too long to be recited. We do declare and order, that the southern bounds of his Majesty's colony of Connecticut is the sea, and that Long-Island is to be under the government of his Royal Highness the Duke of York, as is expressed by plain words in the said patents respectively, and also by virtue of his Majesty's commission, and by the consent of both the governor and the gentlemen above named; we also order and declare that the creek or river called Momoroneck, which is reputed to be about twelve miles to

the east of Westchester, and a line drawn from the east point or side, where the fresh water falls into the salt, at high-water mark, N. N.W. to the line of the Massachusetts, be the western bounds of the said colony of Connecticut, and the plantations lying westward of that creek and line so drawn, to be under his Royal Highness' government ; and all plantations lying eastward of that creek and line, to be under the government of Connecticut.

Given under our hands at Fort James, New-York, on Manhattan Island, this 30th day of Nov., 1664.

RICHARD NICOLLS,  
GEORGE CARTWRIGHT,  
SAMUEL MAVERICK.

We, underwritten, on behalf of the colony of Connecticut, have assented unto this determination of his Majesty's commissioners, in relation to the bounds and limits of his Royal Highness the Duke's patent, and the patent of Connecticut.

JOHN WINTHROP,  
MATHEW ALLEN,  
NATHAN GOULD,  
JAMES RICHARDS,  
JOHN WINTHROP.

*A list of the Deputies from the several towns on Long-Island, and from the town of Westchester, which composed the General Assembly convened at Hempstead by Richard Nicolls, the 1st of March, 1665.*

<i>New-Utrecht,</i>	Jaques Cortelleau, Younger Hope.
<i>Gravesend,</i>	James Hubbard, John Bowne.
<i>Flatlands,</i>	Elbert Elbertson, Reloffe Martens.
<i>Flatbush,</i>	John Stryker, Hendrick Gucksen.
<i>Bushwick,</i>	John Stealman, Gisbert Tunis.
<i>Brooklyn,</i>	Hendrick Lubbertzen, John Evertsen.
<i>New Town,</i>	Richard Betts, John Coe.
<i>Flushing,</i>	Elias Doughty, Richard Cornhill.
<i>Jamaica,</i>	Daniel Denton, Thomas Benedict.
<i>Hempstead,</i>	John Hicks, Robert Jackson.
<i>Oysterbay,</i>	John Underhill, Matthias Harvey.
<i>Huntington,</i>	Jonas Wood, John Ketcham.
<i>Brookhaven,</i>	Daniel Lane, Roger Barton.
<i>Southold,</i>	William Wells, John Youngs.
<i>South Hampton,</i>	Thomas Baker.
<i>East Hampton,</i>	Thomas Baker, John Stratton.
<i>Westchester,</i>	Edward Jessup, John Quinby.

*The Address of the Deputies assembled at Hempstead, to  
his Royal Highness, the Duke of York.*

We, the deputies duly elected from the several towns upon Long-Island, being assembled at Hempstead, in general meeting, by authority derived from your royal highness under the honorable Colonel Nicolls, as deputy governor, do most humbly and thankfully acknowledge to your royal highness, the great honor and satisfaction we receive in our dependence upon your royal highness, according to the tenor of his sacred majesty's patent, granted the 12th day of March, 1664; wherein we acknowledge ourselves, our heirs and successors forever, to be comprized to all intents and purposes, as therein is more at large expressed. And we do publicly and unanimously declare our cheerful submission to all such laws, statutes and ordinances, which are or shall be made by virtue of authority from your royal highness, your heirs and successors forever: As also, that we will maintain, uphold and defend, to the utmost of our power, and peril of us, our heirs and successors forever, all the rights, title and interest, granted by his sacred majesty to your royal highness, against all pretensions or invasions, foreign and domestic; we being already well assured, that, in so doing, we perform our duty of allegiance to his majesty, as freeborn subjects of the kingdom of England inhabiting in these his majesty's dominions. We do farther beseech your royal highness to accept of this address, as the first fruits in this general meeting, for a memorial and record against us, our heirs and successors, when we, or any of them, shall fail in our duties. Lastly, we beseech your royal highness to take our poverties and necessities, in this wilderness country, into speedy consideration; that, by constant supplies of trade, and your royal highness' more particular countenance of grace to us, and protection of us, we may daily more and more be encouraged to bestow our labors to the improvement of these his majesty's western dominions, under your royal highness; for whose health, long life, and eternal happiness, we shall ever pray, as in duty bound.

*From Furman's Brooklyn.*

This address was agreed on at the meeting of the deputies at Hempstead, in March, 1665.

*A Narrative and Remonstrance of the Deputies assembled at Hempstead, in March, 1665, relating to the different apprehensions of some matters then and there transacted.*

His Majesty having employed his ships of war, and sent a considerable number of soldiers to reduce these parts of America to his obedience, the present government was readily received, and peaceably settled on Long Island, by virtue of his Majesty's letters patent, made and granted to his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York and Albany, bearing date the twelfth day of March, in the sixteenth of the reign of our sovereign Lord, King Charles the II., published at Gravesend, on Long-Island, aforesaid, about the middle of August following, in the audience of a great number of the inhabitants thereof, by the Right Honorable Col. Richard Nicolls, deputy Governor under his Royal Highness. At which time and place Gov. Winthrop, being then present, openly declared that their colony claimed no jurisdiction *de jure* over Long-Island; but what they had done was for the welfare, peace, and quiet settlement of his Majesty's subjects, as they were the nearest court of record to them under his Majesty; but now his Majesty's pleasure was fully signified by his letters patent, as above said, their jurisdiction over them ceased and became null; whereupon our honorable governor then replied also, that he would not put out any of the officers which Connecticut had set up in the civil state, but confirm them under his power to act in every town, until a convenient season served to convene deputies from all the towns on the island, when and where laws were to be enacted and civil officers established.

Shortly after, at another meeting of our honorable Governor and Connecticut Commissioners, several persons were there confirmed by him in civil authority, by his writing under his hand, which they published in several towns where they were to collect rates and former dues for Connecticut, unto which power these eastern towns readily and willingly obeyed and submitted for the space of six months at least.

In March following, we were convened, being deputies chosen by the several towns in a general assembly held at Hempstead, where his Majesty's aforesaid patent was first read, and a commission from his Royal Highness the Duke of York, empowering and investing the aforesaid Col. Richard Nicolls, with authority to put the contents of the said patent into practice and execution, who declared unto us that our first business should be to decide some, and to com-



pose other differences which were on float before he came to the government, according to the manner and form in practice since our late acknowledgment of the Connecticut authority ; but that he had prepared a body of general laws hereafter to be observed ; the which were delivered to us, and upon perusal we found them to be a collection of the laws now in practice in his Majesty's other colonies in New-England, with abatement of the severity against such as differ in matters of conscience and religion.

We proceeded to object against some and propose other clauses in the laws, whereupon several amendments were made with further assurance from the Governor, that when any reasonable alteration should be offered from any town to the sessions, the Justices should tender the same at the assizes, and receive satisfaction therein, the truth and effects whereof we have since found.

The Governor further declared that for his own part he expected no benefit for his labors out of the purses of the inhabitants, not so much as to defray his charge and expenses at the courts ; but that it was absolutely necessary to establish a form and rule of county rates, to support the public charge ; whereupon we pitched upon the form and rule at this day observed in Connecticut, which was known to some of those present.

In the next place we conceived that two hundred pounds yearly might defray the public charge ; to which the Governor replied that he would touch none of the public money, but that the high sheriff from year to year should cause the same to be collected, and give, at the expiration of his office, in open court at the general assizes, an account of his receipts and disbursements.

If it should happen the rate was more than the charge of his year, the overplus should remain to the use of the country the next year ; if the charge was greater than the rate, the country was obliged to bear it with an additional rate, in all which transactions we acted with sincerity of heart, according to the best of our understanding, and in obedience to his majesty's authority established by his letters patent over us.

Moreover we appointed a committee to attend the governor for his resolution, whether we might not, according to the custom of the other colonies, choose our magistrates. We received answer by our deputies, that they had seen the instruction of His Royal Highness, wherein the choice of

all the officers of Justice was solely to be made by the Governor, and some of us do know that a Parliament of England can neither make a judge nor justice of the peace.

In conclusion, the governor told us that we had seen and read his Majesty's letters patent, the commission and instructions from his Royal Highness the Duke of York, and if we would have a greater share in the government than he could allow, we must go to the king for it.

Nevertheless some malicious men have aspersed us as betrayers of their liberties and privileges, in subscribing to an address to his Royal Highness, full of duty and gratitude, whereby his Royal Highness may be encouraged the more to take us and the welfare of our posterity into his most princely care and consideration.

Neither can any clause in that address bear any other natural sense and construction than our obedience and submission to his Majesty's letters patent, according to our duty and allegiance.

However, that our neighbors and fellow subjects may be undeceived of the false aspersions thrown upon us, and the impostures of men disaffected to government manifested, lest they should further prevail upon the weakness of others; we the then deputies and subscribers of the said address, conceive ourselves obliged to publish this narrative and remonstrance of the several passages and steps conducting to the present government under which we now live, and we desire that a record hereof may be kept in each town, that future ages may not be seasoned with the sour malice of such unreasonable and groundless aspersions.

Dated the 21st day of June, 1666.

---

*Remonstrance of Southampton against the order requiring them to take out a new patent.*

*Southampton, Feb. 15, 1670.*

To the Governor:

Honourable Sir—We, the inhabitants of this town, do hereby present unto you our humble service, &c., to show our respect to your honour's pleasure, and our obedience to the order of the honourable court of assize—we are bold to manifest herein unto you some reasons why we are unwilling to receive any further patent for our lands, as followeth:

1st, Because, as we have honestly purchased them of the natives, (the proper and natural owners of them,) so also we

have already the patent right, lawfully obtained and derived from the honourable earl of Stirling, we being to pay one fifth part of gold and silver ore, and four bushels of Indian corn yearly.

2dly, Because the injunction laid on persons and plantations by the laws in 1666, to take forth patents for their lands from our then governor, we groundedly conceive intended not the plantations on this east end of the Island, but only those at the west end who were reduced from a foreign government, even as heretofore. Those English that came to dwell within the precincts which the Dutch claimed took out land briefs from the Dutch governor.

3dly, Because those of us, who were first beginners of this plantation, put none but ourselves to the vast charge in our transport hither, we greatly hazarded our lives (as some lost theirs) here amongst and by the then numerous and barbarously cruel natives; yet through divine Providence we have possessed these our lands about 30 years without interruption or molestation by any claiming them from us, and therefore we cannot see why we should lose any of our rightful privileges, so dearly and honestly purchased, or how our lands can be better assured to us by taking out another patent from any one.

4ly, And materially because by our said patent we had license (we being but few) to put ourselves under any of his majesty's colonies for government, whereupon accordingly by willing consent on all sides, we adjoined ourselves to Hartford jurisdiction, and divers of us became members of the king's court there, and when the worthy Mr. Winthrop obtained a patent from his majesty our present lord, King Charles II., for the said colony of Hartford, our town is included, and some of the then chief members of our town expressly nominated in the patent; so that this place became undeniably an absolute limb or part of the said colony; and moreover, since that and after his majesty's commissioners came into these parts, his majesty of grace and free motion was pleased so far to encourage his people of the said colony, as by his letter to assure them that their ecclesiastical and civil privileges which he had granted them should not be infringed or diminished by his said commissioners or any others whatsoever.

5ly, It is not only in all our experience beyond all parallel, that each town should be constrained to take forth a patent, but also the patents here imposed and those given

forth, which yet we have seen, seem to bind persons and towns in matter of payments to the will and mercy of their lord and his successors, or lieutenants; and who can tell but in time to come those may succeed who, through an avaricious distemper, may come upon us with such heavy taxes and intolerable burdens, as may make us, or our poor posterity, to groan like Israel in Egypt.

6ly, Because people are enjoined to acknowledge in the said patent (if we mistake not greatly) that his royal highness the duke of York is sole proprietor of the whole Island, which we cannot consent unto, because we know ourselves to be the true proprietors of the lands we here possess, with the appurtenances thereunto belonging, and also because men are enjoined by the said patent to pay not only all just dues, but also all demands that may be made by his royal highness or his authorized agent.

7ly, Because we are more than confident his majesty will desire no more of us than already we are, even his faithful liege people who have many of us already taken, and the rest of us are ready to take, the oath of allegiance unto him. Willing we are to pay our just dues in town and to the country, and ready to serve his majesty with our lives and fortunes; we are his subjects, and we know he will not make us slaves to any.

8ly, Because Gen. Nichols gave it under his hand that we at this end should have as great privileges as any colony in New-England, and yet we are denied our deputies at the courts; we are forced to pay customs for goods imported, for which custom hath before been paid to his majesty's use in England.

9ly, and Lastly, The king's commissioners in the year 1664, by their proclamation, seemed to demand only the government, with exact and full promise that the people should enjoy whatsoever God's blessing and their own industry had furnished them withal; and we see not what more a patent can assure us; especially considering that the patents here taken forth by places, or particular persons, secure them not absolutely; for it seems to us by the order of the court of assizes, even from them who have received a patent, wood and timber may be taken away without leave and without pay; in all which respects, and some other, we cannot be willing to take forth more patent than we have. And if we do succeed otherwise than we expect, we hope we shall, like good Christians, patiently bear the pressure that



may be permitted to fall upon us, yet never fail to be fervent votaries for your honour's real happiness.

[Signed by Thomas Halsey, jun., and 49 others.]

---

*The Petition of the Members of the Court of Assize, to the Duke of York, for an Assembly.*

*To his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York and Albany:*

The humble petition of the council of the province, the aldermen of New-York, and of the justices assembled at a special court of assize held at the city of New-York, June 29th, 1681,

*Sheweth*—that we, your royal highness' most humble and obedient servants, assembled together by virtue of your royal highness' authority established in his colony, humbly craving the conjunction and assistance of this court to make a submissive address to your royal highness: therein representing the great pressure and lamentable condition of his majesty's subjects in this your royal highness' colony; and also presenting, for the only remedy and ease of those burdens, that an assembly of the people may be established by a free choice of the freeholders and inhabitants of this your royal highness' colony. The which request, we having maturely and deliberately weighed and considered, and having full assurance of your royal highness' good gracious and real intentions to encourage and advance the ease, benefit, and advantage of trade, and the merchants and inhabitants of this your said colony, and the removal of all things that might obstruct or hinder the same to us particularly, signified by your gracious commission given to John Lemon, your royal highness' agent and servant here, bearing date the 24th of May, 1680, which with great joy and general satisfaction was received and published. Expecting and longing for the happy event of such your royal highness' grace and favour, the enjoyment of which we have not as yet attained, we find ourselves encouraged and obliged to concur with the said grand inquest; and in all submissive manner to prostrate ourselves at your royal highness' feet, and represent the miserable and deplorable condition of the inhabitants of this your royal highness' colony, who for many years past have groaned under inexpressible burdens by having an arbitrary and absolute power used and exercised over us, by which a yearly revenue is exacted from us

against our wills, and trade grievously burdened with undue and unusual customs imposed on the merchandise without our consent—our liberty and freedom intralled, and the inhabitants wholly shut out and deprived of any share, vote or interest, in the government, to their great discouragement, and contrary to the laws, rights, liberties, and privileges, of the subject; so that we are esteemed as nothing, and have become a reproach to the neighbours in other his majesty's colonies, who flourish under the fruition and protection of his majesty's unparalleled form and method of government in his realm of England, the undoubted birth-right of all his subjects. Which necessitates us, in behalf of this your royal highness' colony, to become humble suppliants and suitors to your royal highness; praying, and we do hereby humbly and submissively, with all obedience, pray and beseech your royal highness, that, for the redressing and removal of the said grievances, the government of this your colony may, for the future, be settled and established, ruled and governed, by a governor, council, and assembly; which assembly to be duly elected and chosen by the freeholders of this your royal highness' colony, as is usual and practicable with the realm of England, and other his majesty's plantations. Which will give great ease and satisfaction to all his majesty's subjects in this your royal highness' colony; who desire no greater happiness than the continuance of your royal highness' grace and favour, and to be and remain his majesty's loyal and free subjects.

By order, &c.

JOHN WEST, *Clerk of Assize.*

---

*Of the Pirate, William Kidd.*

William Kidd, who was commissioned in 1696 to go against the pirates, who then infested the seas, became a pirate, sailed to Madagascar, and ravaged the sea and the coast from the Red Sea to the coast of Malabar for nearly a year, when he returned with more valuable spoil, than perhaps ever fell to the lot of a pirate. On his way from the West Indies to Boston, he anchored in Gardiner's Bay, landed on the island, and buried a box of gold, silver and precious stones. The owner of the island was intrusted with the secret, and his life was the pledge of its secrecy. Kidd made similar deposits in other places along the coast. On Kidd's arrival at Boston, on the 1st July, 1699, he was seized and

committed by the order of the Governor, the Earl of Bellamont, and among his papers was found an account of all his deposits. Commissioners were appointed to collect and secure them. They called on Mr. Gardiner for the box that was deposited on the Island, who, after he was assured that Kidd was in safe custody, and not likely again to be in a condition to injure him, procured the box and delivered it to the Commissioners.

Kidd was sent to England and tried and executed May 9th, 1701.

The tradition of Kidd's having buried his treasures along the coast, unaccompanied by the history of their discovery, has given rise to the idle practice of money digging, under the impression that those treasures are still to be found.

Among the papers of the late John L. Gardiner, Esq., is an account of the treasure deposited on the Island, taken from the list of Kidd's treasures, which were seenred by the commissioners, of which the following is a summary:

Received, the 17th inst., of Mr. John		
Gardiner, three bags of gold dust,		
containing - - - -	136	oz.
Two bags of gold bars, containing 501 $\frac{3}{4}$		
One do. of coined gold, do. - -	11 &	silver 124 oz.
One do. broken silver do. - -	173 $\frac{1}{2}$	
Two do. silver bars - - - -	521	
One do. silver buttons and a lamp,	29	
One bag containing three silver		
rings and sundry precious stones,		4 $\frac{1}{2}$ oz.
One do. of unpolished stones, -	12 $\frac{1}{2}$	
	<hr/> 738 $\frac{3}{4}$	<hr/> 847 $\frac{1}{2}$ 17 $\frac{3}{4}$

One bag containing one piece of Bristol and Bezoar stones, two cornelian rings, and two small agates, two amethysts.

Which account was presented by Samuel Sewell, Nathaniel Byfield, Jeremiah Dumer and Andrew Belcher, esqs., commissioners appointed to receive and secure the same, under oath, to the Earl of Bellamont, Governor of Massachusetts.

This is only a part of the first of thirteen sheets, in which the whole account was comprized, as is certified by H. C. Addington, Secretary of State, July 25th, 1699.

*A list of the Governors, Lieutenant Governors, and Presidents of the Council who administered the government of the colony and state of New-York, from 1629 to the present time.*

## DUTCH GOVERNORS.

Wouter Van Twiller,	-	-	-	-	-	1629
William Kieft,	-	-	-	-	-	1638
Peter Stuyvesant,	-	-	-	-	-	1647

## ENGLISH GOVERNORS, &amp;c.

Richard Nicolls,	-	-	-	-	-	1664
Francis Lovelace,	-	-	-	-	-	1667
Anthony Colve, on a recapture of the province by the Dutch,	-	-	-	-	-	1673
After the surrender to the English, Sir Edmund Andross,	-	-	-	-	-	1674
Anthony Brockholst,	-	-	-	-	-	1681
Thomas Dongan,	-	-	-	-	-	1683
Francis Nicholson,	-	-	-	-	-	1688
Jacob Leisler,	-	-	-	-	-	1689
Henry Slaughter,	-	-	-	-	-	1691
Richard Ingolsby,	-	-	-	-	-	1691
Benjamin Fletcher,	-	-	-	-	-	1692
Richard, Earl of Bellamont,	-	-	-	-	-	1698
John Nanfan,	-	-	-	-	-	1699
Lord Cornbury,	-	-	-	-	-	1702
Lord Lovelace,	-	-	-	-	-	1708
Richard Ingolsby,	-	-	-	-	-	1709
Gerardus Beekman,	-	-	-	-	-	1710
Brigadier Hunter,	-	-	-	-	-	1710
Peter Schuyler,	-	-	-	-	-	1719
William Burnet,	-	-	-	-	-	1720
John Montgomerie,	-	-	-	-	-	1728
Rip Van Dam,	-	-	-	-	-	1731
William Cosby,	-	-	-	-	-	1732
George Clark,	-	-	-	-	-	1736
George Clinton,	-	-	-	-	-	1743
Danvers Osborn,	-	-	-	-	-	1753
James De Lancey,	-	-	-	-	-	1753
Sir Charles Hardy,	-	-	-	-	-	1755
James De Lancey,	-	-	-	-	-	1757
Cadwallader Colden,	-	-	-	-	-	1760
Robert Monkton,	-	-	-	-	-	1762
Cadwallader Colden,	-	-	-	-	-	1763



Henry Moore,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1765
John, Earl of Dunmore,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1770
William Tryon,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1771

## STATE GOVERNORS.

George Clinton,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1777
John Jay,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1795
George Clinton,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1801
Morgan Lewis,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1804
Daniel D. Tompkins,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1807
De Witt Clinton,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1817
the same,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1820
Joseph C. Yates,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1822
De Witt Clinton,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1824

## CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
State of the country at the time of its first settlement,	3
Of the interfering claims of the Dutch and English,	5
Of the settlement of the Island, - - - - -	8
Of Trade among the first settlers, - - - - -	14
Of the Character of the first settlers, - - - - -	17
Of the political condition of the English towns, -	19
Of their union with Connecticut, - - - - -	24
Of the Ecclesiastical state of the several towns, -	29
Of the Indians on Long-Island, - - - - -	63
Of the political condition of the several towns in the Dutch territory, - - - - -	82
Of the English Government after the conquest in 1664 to the American Revolution, - - - - -	84

---

## APPENDIX.

Sketch of General Woodhull, - - - - -	123
-----Colonel William Smith, - - - - -	142
-----William Nicolls, Esq., - - - - -	147
Of the several Courts, - - - - -	152
Representatives in the first Convention, - - - - -	158
Population at different periods, - - - - -	161
Climate, - - - - -	163
Treaty of Hartford in 1650, - - - - -	167
Remonstrance of the towns in 1655, - - - - -	168
Social Contract of East Hampton in 1655, - - - - -	172
Original Dutch Grant for Jamaica, - - - - -	172
Transactions of Connecticut Assembly, - - - - -	173
Annexation of Long-Island to New-York, - - - - -	174
Deputies to Assembly at Hempstead in 1655, - - - - -	175
Address of the Deputies, - - - - -	176
Remonstrance of do. - - - - -	177
Remonstrance of Southampton in 1670, - - - - -	179
Petition of Court of Assize in 1681, - - - - -	182
Of the Pirate William Kidd, - - - - -	183
List of Governors, to the present time, - - - - -	185



ADDITIONS BY THE EDITOR.





## THE MURDER OF GENERAL WOODHULL.

---

The inhuman and brutal slaughter of Gen. Woodhull, which had properly so large a share of the attention of Silas Wood, has, of recent years, evoked some new testimony, which changes entirely the direction of opinion in regard to its perpetrator.

Robert Troup was a graduate of Columbia College, by profession a lawyer, a man of sterling piety, and of most respectable standing in society. At the time of the battle of Long-Island, he was a Lieutenant in Col. Lasher's battalion of New-York militia, was made prisoner five miles west of Jamaica on the 27th of August, the day of the battle, and was put, with many other prisoners, on board a small vessel or transport lying at Gravesend, which had been employed in the transportation of cattle. After his release he made an affidavit of his personal sufferings, which concluded with the following recital in relation to General Woodhull :

"That while he was confined on board the said transport, Brigadier General Woodhull was also brought on board, in a shockingly mangled condition ; that deponent asked the General the particulars of his capture, and was told by the said General, that he had been taken by a party of light-horse, under the command of Capt. Oliver De Lancey ; that he was asked by the said Captain if he would surrender ; that he answered in the affirmative, provided he would treat him like a gentleman, which Captain De Lancey assured him he would, whereupon the General delivered his sword, and that immediately after, the said Oliver De Lancey, jr., struck him, and others of the said party imitating his example, did cruelly cut and hack him in the manner he then was ; that although he was in such a mangled and horrible situation, he had nevertheless, been obliged to sleep on the bare floor of the said transport, if a Lieutenant of the man-of-war who guarded the transport, had not lent him a mattress ; that Gen. Woodhull was afterwards carried to the hospital in the church of New-Utrecht, where he perished, as deponent was on good authority informed, through want of care, and other necessities ; and further this deponent saith not.

" ROBERT TROUP.

" *Sworn the 17th January, 1777, before me,*

" GOUV. MORRIS."

In after life Robert Troup was a judge, member of the Legislature and warden of Trinity Church. He was the personal friend and political associate of Jay and Hamilton, and a man of stainless honor.

The above affidavit, which lay in the Secretary of State's office, in the handwriting of Gouv. Morris, was made public in the reports of the Legislature of this state in 1842. It was published in the valuable collection of revolutionary incidents of Kings, Queens and Suffolk, by Henry Onderdonk, jr., and called forth letters from James Fennimore Cooper, the novelist, whose wife was a daughter of John Peter De Lancey, of Mamaroneck, controverting the allegation against Oliver, jr. In the progress of this discussion, Mr. Cooper calls to mind a conversation held by him with his father-in-law, in which the latter is reported as saying: "They endeavored to put the death of Gen. Woodhull on my cousin, General De Lancey, but *Oliver always denied the same.*"

The affidavit of an irreproachable and unimpeachable witness, of statements made by another of equally high character, if not *in extremis*, under circumstances of great solemnity, soon followed by death, will hardly leave the immediate instrumentality by which General Woodhull suffered, a debateable question.

The correspondence is diffuse and ingenious on the part of Mr. Cooper; but the candid reader will be compelled to admit, that the portion of Mr. Onderdonk, is characterised by close logic and thorough research, to which the effort of the challenger lays very small claim.

#### THE SYLVESTER FAMILY, OF SHELTER ISLAND.

Nathaniel Sylvester, who was the first settler of Shelter Island, and afterwards the owner of the whole Island, was the son of the celebrated poet, Joshua Sylvester of London, who died in 1617. His wife was Griselda Brinley, daughter of Thomas Brinley, of Datchet, Eng., receiver of revennes under Kings Charles 1st and 2d, and sister of the first Francis Brinley, of Newport and Boston. Nathaniel Sylvester and his wife must have come to this country about 1640. He, with others, purchased Shelter Island of Thomas Goodyear, of New-

Haven, who had it of James Farrett, agent of the Earl of Stirling. By subsequent purchases, and through confiscation by the Dutch, of that part owned by Thomas Middleton and Constant Sylvester, he was compelled to purchase the whole Island, and in his will, which gives an interesting account of this transaction, dated 1789, he disposes of it, as well as Robins Island and other property in the town of Southold, to his wife and children. He must have died soon after the last named date, as is ascertained by the probate of his will. He was a man of great enterprise and intrepidity, and received and protected at Shelter Island, a number of families of fugitives, from the insane persecutions of the colony of Massachusetts, in early times, some of whom died on the Island. This regard for the education of his children, for justice and religion, as well as for kindness and benevolence is abundantly manifested in his will, which is an elaborate document and the only written memorial he has left behind. He had eleven children, Griselda, the eldest daughter, married James Lloyd, of Boston; they afterwards resided at "Lloyd's Neck," a part of which she owned previous to her marriage, and part was purchased by Mr. Lloyd. Giles, the eldest son, inherited a large share of the Island by the bequest of his father, and two or three of his brothers who died unmarried. He married Mrs. ——— Savage, of Boston. He resided at Shelter Island, spending much time also in New-York, where he died in 1701, bequeathing his property on Shelter-Island to William Nicoll, of Islip; he had no children. Nathaniel Sylvester, the second son, sold his property on Shelter Island, being 1,000 acres in the centre of the Island, to George Havens, of Rhode Island, and removed to Newport. He married Miss Hobert, of East Hampton, and was the father of Brinley Sylvester, and three other children; he died in Newport in 17—. The other sons of the first Nathaniel Sylvester lived and died on Shelter-Island. One of his daughters married Benjamin L'Hommedieu, of Southold, a French Huguenot, and the ancestor of Ezra L'Hommedieu, a patriot of the revolution, and one of the most distinguished statesmen and senators of the state of New-York, 1775 to 1809. Brinley Sylvester, grandson of the first Nathaniel, and son of the second Nathaniel, was born in 1694, and was married to Mary Burroughs, daughter of Thomas Burroughs, of New-York, in 1719. He removed from Newport in 1725, and occupied the mansion of his grandfather, with about 1,200 acres of land attached thereto, where



he resided till the close of his life. He erected on the site of the old building, a new, commodious and stately mansion, which is still there, and in good repair, after a lapse of a century and a quarter. He was a man of intelligence, piety and benevolence, conscientious and prompt in all the duties of life; he was greatly instrumental in the erection of the first building for public worship on Shelter Island, and bequeathed at his death £100 for the support of the Gospel. Previous to the erection of this building he attended the services of the Rev. Mr. Young, of Southold. He had two children, both daughters; Margaret, the elder, married David Cheeseboro, of Newport, and Mary, the younger, married Thomas Dering, of Shelter Island. Full length portraits of these ladies are still in the family, and are much admired as specimens of beauty, both of nature and art. The death of Brinley Sylvester, which occurred in 1752, was greatly lamented, and in a sermon preached on the occasion of his death, by the Rev. Mr. Phillips, of Southold, which was printed in Boston, we find portrayed a character of uncommon excellence. His wife, who died in 1742, is represented in memorials which still remain, to have been a woman of great piety and benevolence. Their daughter, Mary, was the last of the Sylvesters on the Island.

For a more particular account of the Sylvester and Dering families, see memorials of the early settlers of Shelter Island, in print, by Nicoll H. Dering, M. D.

---

#### THE DERING FAMILY, OF SHELTER ISLAND.

---

Henry Dering, the Ancestor of this family in America, was born in Dorsetshire, England, August 1639. The exact time of his coming to this country is not known, but it was in early life, as he was married in Boston, in 1664, to Ann Bennig, by whom he had five children. After her death, he was again married on Nov. 15th, 1676, to Elizabeth Atkinson, widow of Theodore Atkinson, and daughter of Edward Mitchelson, Provincial Marshal-General of the colony of Massachusetts, by whom he had also five children. He was a merchant of Boston, a man of erudition, especially skilled in ecclesiastical learning, as numerous manuscripts abundantly show. He was a member of the Governor's council at the time of his

death, in 1717, and his wife dying on the same day, they were both interred in a common grave. One of his daughters married William Welstead, naval officer of the Port of Boston, whose son was the Rev. Henry Welstead, a distinguished minister of Boston. Henry Dering, his son, the second of the name in the male line, was born October 6th, 1684, and was married to Elizabeth Packer, of Portsmouth, N. H., February 8th, 1709. He also was a merchant of Boston, became a rich man, and died October 20th, 1750, at the age of 66, leaving a numerous family. His daughter, Elizabeth, married Samuel Wentworth, and was the Ancestress of the celebrated authoress, Mrs. Gore. His daughter, Anne, married James Monk, Esq., of Boston, and afterwards of Halifax, and was the mother of Chief Justice Monk, of Montreal, afterwards Sir James Monk, one of whose descendants, S. Cornwallis Monk, is now Judge of the Supreme Court of Lower Canada. His daughter, Sarah, married Nathaniel Ray Thomas, of Marshfield, Mass., who, during the revolutionary war, removed to Nova Scotia, and some of their descendants are still living there. Thomas Dering, son of the last named Henry Dering, was born May 16th, 1720, and was married to Mary Sylvester, daughter of Brinley Sylvester, of Shelter Island, March 9th, 1756. He, too, was a merchant of Boston, in connection with his brother Henry, who, having died of yellow fever on his return from the West Indies, their business in Boston was closed, and he then removed to Shelter Island, where he became engaged in agricultural pursuits, upon the estate devised by Brinley Sylvester to his daughters, successfully cultivating it until 1776. Being naturally of a social disposition, he greatly enjoyed the pleasures of hospitality, and was always happy in entertaining his friends, and especially those of a religious character. Clergymen of all denominations here found a welcome home, and twice was he visited by the celebrated George Whitfield. The Rev. Samuel Adams resided at his house, and preached on the Island for a number of years. Having espoused the Whig cause, and being a member of the Provincial Congress of the state of New-York, which reaffirmed the Declaration of Independence of the United States, he was obliged, on the capture of Long-Island by the British, to remove for safety from Shelter Island, and Middletown, Ct., became his place of residence until the close of the war. He died at Shelter Island in 1785; Mrs. Dering survived him ten years. They left three children, Sylvester,

Elizabeth, and Henry Packer. The sons inherited the landed estate on Shelter Island, that of their mother, and their annt, Margaret Cheeseborough. Sylvester Dering became a permanent resident of Shelter Island; he was born Nov. 27th, 1758, and was married Nov. 27th, 1787, to Esther Sarah Havens, daughter of Nicoll Havens, of Shelter Island, and great-grand-daughter of William Nicoll, of Islip. He resided in the mansion erected by Brinley Sylvester in 1735, which was remarkable for the beauty of its situation, and the long avenue of large cherry trees leading to it. Mr. Dering was actively and successfully engaged in agriculture. He was the first to introduce the breed of merino sheep into the country, and derived much profit from the sale of the increase, and of the wool. He was, soon after the war, commissioned by Gov. George Clinton as Lieutenant Colonel, and served faithfully for many years as Colonel and Brigadier General in the militia, which he greatly improved in discipline. He was also, by the appointment of President Madison, made principal assessor of the 1st Congressional District of New-York. He, too, was social in his disposition, and was greatly delighted to entertain his friends, and being an elder in the church, his house was the frequent resort of clergymen, many of whom were his intimate friends. He died from the effect of an injury received by the fall of his horse, Oct. 8th, 1820, in the 62d year of his age. His widow survived him 19 years. Henry Packer Dering, although retaining possession of his landed estate on Shelter Island, where he erected commodious and expensive buildings, resided at Sag Harbor. He graduated at Yale College in 1784, after which, for a few years, he engaged in mercantile pursuits, which he relinquished in 1790, on being appointed by President Washington collector of the customs and post master at Sag Harbor, which offices he retained to the close of his life, during a period of 30 years. He was most actively engaged in attending to these and many minor offices, and in directing the affairs of his farm. He enjoyed through life a high reputation for hospitality and the cultivation of the amenities of life, as well as for integrity and talents for business. He married Anna Fosdick, daughter of Dr. Thomas Fosdick, of New London, in 1794, who survived him 25 years. He died in 1822, aged 59.

Charles Thomas Dering, eldest son of Sylvester Dering, was born Nov. 17th, 1790. He married Eliza Floyd Nicoll, daughter of Samuel B. Nicoll, of Shelter Island, Aug. 17th, 1816. He early en-

gaged in mercantile pursuits, first in Utica, N. Y., afterwards in Hamilton, Madison Co., N. Y. Here, in 1813, he was appointed by President Madison collector of internal revenue. In 1819 he removed to Sag Harbor, where he entered upon the whaling business, in which he was successfully engaged until near the close of his life. He, too, enjoyed the pleasures of friendship and hospitality, and was highly esteemed for the strictness of his integrity and the soundness of his judgment. Nicoll H. Dering, second son of Sylvester, was born January 1st, 1794; he graduated at Yale College in 1813, and at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, in New-York, in 1817, was appointed commissioner of health for the city of New-York in 1818. He was married, first, to Frances Huntington, daughter of Henry Huntington, of Rome, N. Y., June 6th, 1826, by whom he had seven children; secondly, to Sarah H. Strong, daughter of Benjamin Strong, of New-York, Oct. 1st, 1844. He was extensively engaged in the practice of physic, in the city of New-York, until 1843, when he removed to Rome, N. Y., and afterwards to Utica, where he still resides.

Henry Sylvester Dering, third son of Sylvester Dering, was born Sept. 29th, 1804. He graduated as doctor of medicine, at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, in New-York, in 1829, and soon commenced the practice of physic at Setanket, Long-Island, where he still resides. He married H. Eliza Hulse, April 29th, 1839, and has had six children.

Henry P. Dering, of Sag Harbor, had nine children. The eldest, Thomas, was collector of the customs at Sag Harbor for many years, and afterwards filled responsible offices in New-York and New London. He married Gloriana Havens, daughter of Renselaer Havens, of New-York. He was remarkable for his piety, probity and high sense of honor, in all the affairs of life. Brinley Sylvester Dering, second son of Henry P. Dering, was lost at sea in early manhood. Lodowick, third son of Henry P. Dering, was a merchant of Sag Harbor; he married Eliza Mulford, daughter of Mr. Mulford, of Easthampton, L. I., and died in 1860, leaving two sons, Henry Packer and Edward.

Nicoll R. Dering, fourth and youngest son of Henry P. Dering, became the captain of a whaling ship out of Sag Harbor, and now resides in California. The daughters of Henry P. Dering were, Frances, Gloriana, Elizabeth Packer, and Charlotte, the last-named married to William R. Sleight, of Sag Harbor.



Sylvester Dering, only son of Dr. Nicoll H. Dering, was born March 12th, 1838. He was married to Ella V. Bristol, daughter of Willis Bristol, of New Haven, Ct., Feb. 24th, 1864. He is a lawyer in Utica, N. Y., and a Brigadier General of the National Guard. The daughters of Nicoll H. Dering, are Annie Huntington, married to Charles S. Wilson of Utica, Sarah Sylvester, Catherine Mary, and Frances Huntington.

Charles T. Dering, eldest son of Dr. Henry S. Dering, was born in 1843. He graduated at Hamilton College, Clinton, N. Y., in 1864. Henry, second son of Henry S. Dering, is still a youth; his daughters are Sarah, Frances, and Mary Sylvester. For a more particular account of the Dering and Sylvester families, see memoirs of the early settlers of Shelter Island in print, by Nicoll H. Dering, M. D.

*Copy original Deed of a portion of Smithtown, L. I., in possession of the Long Island Historical Society:*

EASTHAMPTON, July 14th, 1659.

Bee it knowne unto all men, both English and Indians, especially the inhabitants of Long-Island: that I, Wayandance Sachame, of Pamanaek, with my wife and sonn Wiankanbone, my only sonn and heire, haveinge delyberately considered how this twentie-foure years wee have bene not only acquainted with Lion: Gardiner, but from time to time have reseived much kindnes of him and from him, not onely by counsell and advice in our prosperitie, but in our great extremitye, when wee were almost swallowed upp of our enemies, then wee say he apeared to us not onely as a friend, but as a father, in giveinge us his monie and goods, wherby wee defended ourselves, and ransomd my daughter and friends, and wee say and know that by his meanes we had great comfort and releife from the most honorable of the English nation heare about us; soe that seinge wee yet live, and both of us beinge now ould, and not that wee at any time have given him any thinge to gratifie his fatherly love, care and charge, we haveinge nothing left that is worth his acceptance bnt a small tract of land which wee desire him to Accept of for himselfe, his heires, executors and assignes forever; now that it may bee knowne how and where that land lieth on Long Island, we say it lieth betwene Huntington and Seatacut, the westerne bounds being

Cowharbor, easterly Arhata a munt, and southerly crosse the Island to the end of the great hollow or valley, or more, then half through the Island southerly; and that this gift is our free act and deede, doth appeare by our hand-martes under writ.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of

Witnes :

RICHARD SMYTHE.

THOMAS CHATFIELD.

THOMAS TALLMAGE.

WAYANDANCE, his 88 mark.

WIANKOMDONE, his M mark.

The sachem's wife, her Swq mark.




---

### FIRST MOVEMENTS OF SETTLEMENT.

---

The bark Blessing, built by Governor Winthrop, at Mistiek, in 1631, returned October 2d, 1634, from a voyage southward to "the Dutch plantation upon Hudson's river," having made "a further discovery of that [land] called Long-Island. There they procured Wampampeag, both white and blue," &c. Hubbard's N. E., page 171.

This was followed, in 1640, by the first settlement on the eastern part of the Island, at SOUTH-HOLM, by a purchase of the land, (according to the same authority,) by "some of New-Haven," [from the Indians,] "without the legal basis of a patent," who disposed of it to the settlers on condition of their union with New-Haven.

SOUTH-HAMPTON was settled, soon after, by the company of Daniel How, who had been driven with their vessel, by the Dutch, from Cow Bay, (in North Hempstead, Queens County, now Manhassett,) where they had made a clearing, and erected some small houses.

The deed of Farret, as deputy of the Earl of Stirling, is dated April 17, 1640. The examination of the Cow Bay intruders, under arrest of the Dutch, commenced on the 16th May following, and on the 19th they were discharged upon their pledge to leave the territory of the Dutch. (Colonial Hist. N. Y., Vol. 2, page 144 to 150.

The deed of Farret gives How and associates choice of eight miles square, to improve and enjoy, and is approved by Gov. Win-

throp, with some comments on its provisions, by a memorandum thereon, dated October 20th, 1641. Under this deed, failing at Cow Bay, they settled at Southampton.

A protest made by Farret, before Gov. Winthrop, at Boston, Sept. 28, 1641, against Edward Tomlyns, Timothy Tomlyns and Hansard Knowles, and others, who are referred to as having taken possession of "*some part of Long-Island*," without authority from the Earl, and warning them and their tenants against ejectments, is set forth in full by James Savage in a note to Winthrop's Journal, Vol. 2, page 5, and in Thompson's Hist. L. I., Vol. 2, page 52. Mr. Savage wonders that this document did not attract the attention of Silas Wood, and he and Thompson both assume that it applies to the conveyance under which the futile settlement at Cow Bay was made. The names of the parties protested against do not appear in the deed to How, nor among the settlers, nor were they mentioned in the examination before the Dutch Director. I think there is a mistake of location.

The first patents from the Dutch, on the west end of the Island, were of Flatlands, and the other flat districts in its vicinity, in 1636, (the Dutch from the Netherlands naturally preferring such lands,) though there was but little tillage or improvement by farm laborers or other settlers, until after 1640. The name "Sewanhacky," (Island of Shells, or shell money,) appears in one of these early patents.

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

1. PORTRAIT OF SILAS WOOD, FROM A MINIATURE ON IVORY.
2. PLACE OF HIS BIRTH, AT WEST HILLS.
3. RESIDENCE FOR MANY YEARS, AND PLACE OF HIS DECEASE, IN THE VILLAGE OF HUNTINGTON.

## EXTENDED INDEX.

	PAGE.
ADDRESS OF DEPUTIES AT HEMPSTEAD, 1665,.....	176
ADJACENT ISLANDS,.....	26
ADDITIONS BY THE EDITOR,.....	189
ADVERTISEMENT, OBJECT OF REPUBLICATION,.....	2
AMERICA, DISCOVERY OF,.....	5
AMERSFORT, (FLATLANDS,).....	8, 13
ANNEXATION OF LONG-ISLAND TO NEW-YORK,.....	174
APPENDIX, CONTENTS OF,.....	187
ASSEMBLIES, COLONIAL, 1681,.....	101
ASSEMBLY AND COUNCIL, MEMBERS OF, FROM 1691 TO 1775,...	158
ATTORNEY, POWER OF, TO FARRET,.....	6
BOUNDARIES OF DUTCH AND ENGLISH TERRITORY,.....	11
BOUNDARIES, COMMISSIONERS TO FIX,.....	27
BROOKHAVEN,.....	13, 14, 24
BROOKLYN,.....	10, 13, 83, 87
BRITISH CONQUEST, 1664,.....	88
BUSHWICK,.....	87
CANOE PLACE,.....	63
CATTLE,.....	4, 8
CHURCHES,.....	29 to 63
CIVIL AND POLITICAL CONDITION OF ENGLISH TOWNS,.....	19
CLAIMS, DUTCH AND ENGLISH,.....	5
CLEARING LANDS,.....	3
CLIMATE,.....	3
COLONY ASSEMBLY, THE FIRST,.....	101
COMMON LAW,.....	23, 24



	PAGE.
CONNECTICUT, UNION OF TOWNS WITH,.....	25, 26, 28, 87
CONTENTS, AUTHOR'S TABLE OF,.....	187
CORN,.....	5
COURTS,.....	23, 27, 101, 102, 152 to 158
CLERKS,.....	155, 156, 157
CLIMATE, .....	163, 164, 165, 166
DEBTS PAID IN PRODUCE,.....	15
DEPUTIES TO GENERAL ASSEMBLY AT HEMPSTEAD,.....	175
DISCOVERY BY HUDSON,.....	7
DELANCY, OLIVER, JR.,.....	191
DERING FAMILY, OF SHELTER ISLAND,.....	194 to 198
DUKE'S GOVERNMENT, TYRANNY OF,.....	91
DUKE'S GOVERNMENT, RESTORATION OF,.....	99
DUKE'S LAWS,.....	89
DUTCH SETTLEMENTS, EXTENT OF,.....	8
DUTCH TOWNS, POLITICAL CONDITION OF,.....	81
DUTCH GOVERNMENT, TYRANNY OF,.....	85
DUTCH RE-CONQUEST, 1673,.....	97
DUTCH SURRENDER, 1664, .....	28
DUTCH CHURCHES AND MINISTERS,.....	29, 30, 31
EARL OF STIRLING, PATENT TO, .....	7
EASTHAMPTON,.....	13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 20, 21, 22, 23, 25, 27
EASTHAMPTON, SOCIAL CONTRACT OF,.....	172
ECCLESIASTICAL STATE OF TOWNS,.....	29 to 63
ENGLISH TOWNS UNDER THE DUTCH,.....	84
ENGLISH CHURCHES AND MINISTERS,.....	31 to 63
ENGLISH GOVERNMENT, FROM CONQUEST TO REVOLUTION, 88 to	91
ESTIMATES OF VALUE TO STOCK, 1665,.....	16
EVACUATION OF LONG-ISLAND,.....	119
FIELD OFFICERS AND CAPTAINS, NEW-YORK TROOPS,.....	140
FIELD OFFICERS AND CAPTAINS, LONG-ISLAND MILITIA,.....	141
FIRST CHILD BORN ON LONG-ISLAND,.....	10
FIRST PURCHASE FROM INDIANS,.....	7
FLATLANDS, .....	13, 87
FLATBUSH, .....	13, 87
FLUSHING,.....	10, 14, 63
FORT NECK, BATTLE OF,.....	75
FRESH POND,.....	63

	PAGE.
GARDINER, LYON,.....	9
GARDINER'S ISLAND,.....9,	13
GOSPEL, SUPPORT OF,.....	22
GOVERNORS FROM 1629 TO 1824,.....180,	181
GRAVESEND,.....4, 10, 13, 15, 28, 74,	87
GREAT NECK,.....	10
HARTFORD, TREATY OF 1650,.....	167
HEMPSTEAD,.....3, 4, 10, 13, 14, 15, 17, 18, 22, 24,	65
HOW'S BAY, .....	11
HOW, CAPTAIN DANIEL,.....	11
HUDSON'S DISCOVERY, 1609,.....	7
HUGUENOTS,.....	9
HUNTINGTON,.....3, 4, 13, 14, 15, 16, 18, 21, 22,	26
IMPROVEMENTS, FIRST,.....	3
INDEPENDENTS OR PRESBYTERIANS,.....	18
INDIANS,.....	3
INDIAN LANGUAGE,.....	70
INDIAN PREACHERS,.....	73
INDIANS, FIRST PURCHASES FROM,.....	7
INDIAN TRIBES ON THE ISLAND,.....	63
INDIANS, POLITICAL STATE OF,.....	64
INDIANS, RELIGION OF,....	70
INDIANS, MEASURES TO PRESERVE PEACE WITH,.....	71
INTRODUCTORY NOTE,.....3,	4
ISLIP,.....	14
JAMAICA, DUTCH GRANT OF, .....	172
JAMAICA,.....5, 10, 13, 14, 15,	63
JONES, DAVID, (SPEAKER),.....	158
JUDGES AND JUSTICES,.....155, 156,	157
KIDD, WM., THE PIRATE, ACCOUNT OF,.....	183
LAWS,.....	20
LEGISLATIVE HARDSHIPS OF TAXATION AFTER THE WAR,.....	122
LEISLER, JACOB,.....106 to	112
LITTLE NECK,.....	11
LLOYD'S NECK,.....	120
LONG-ISLAND,....	7, 26, 27
LONG-ISLAND SOUND,.....	7

MASON, JOHN, CAPT., .....	77
MIDDLEBURGH, (NEWTOWN,).....13,	82
MIDWOUT, (FLATBUSH,).....	13
MILBOURN, MAJOR, .....	108
MILITIA, .....	18
MINISTERS, DUTCH, .....	29, 30, 31
MINISTERS, ENGLISH,.....31 to	63
MONTAUK,.....9, 63,	70
MOODY, LADY,.....	87
NARRATIVE AND REMONSTRANCE HEMPSTEAD, 1665,.....	177
NASSAU ISLAND NAMED BY STATUTE, .....	65
NEW-ENGLAND AFFORDS PROTECTION,.....	11
NEW-ENGLAND COLONIES,.....	25
NEW PATENT, SOUTHAMPTON AGAINST,.....	182
NEWTOWN,.....3, 4, 10, 13, 14, 15,	63
NEW-UTRECHT,.....13, 83,	87
NEW-YORK TAKES JURISDICTION,.....	28
NICHOLS, WILLIAM, SKETCH OF,.....147 to	152
NINIGRET, NARRAGANSET CHIEF,.....	67
OYSTERBAY,.....4, 11, 12, 13, 14, 18,	24
OFFICERS WITH GEN. WOODHULL,.....	142
PATCHOGUE,.....	63
PATENTS OF LAND, DUTCH,.....	7
PATENTS OF LAND, ENGLISH,.....	6
PAUMANACKE, (LONG-ISLAND,).....	65
PETITION FOR AN ASSEMBLY, .....	178
POPULATION AT DIFFERENT PERIODS,.....	161
PRESBYTERIANS OR INDEPENDENTS,.....	18
PRICES,.....	17
REMONSTRANCE, SOUTHAMPTON, 1670,.....	179
REMONSTRANCE OF DUTCH TOWNS, 1653,.....	168
REPRESENTATIVES, FIRST CONVENTION,.....	159
REPRESENTATIVES IN PROVINCIAL CONGRESS,.....	160
RESTORATION OF DUKE'S GOVERNMENT,.....	99
REVENUE, PUBLIC,.....	113
REVOLUTIONARY WAR,.....	119
RIDINGS OF YORKSHIRE,.....88,	89

ROCKAWAY,.....	63 .
RUSTDORP, (JAMAICA,).....	13, 82
SCOUT'S BAY,.....	11
SETAUKET, .....	63
SETTLEMENT OF L. I.....	8, 10, 13
SETTLEMENT, FIRST MOVEMENTS OF,.....	199, 200
SETTLEMENT, LEGAL RIGHT OF,.....	5
SETTLEMENTS IN NEW-ENGLAND,.....	8
SHELTER-ISLAND,.....	9, 13, 14, 63, 98
SHELL BANKS,.....	64
SMITH, COL. WM., SKETCH OF,.....	142 to 147
SMITHTOWN, .....	14, 68
SMITHTOWN, INDIAN DEED OF,.....	198
SOUTHAMPTON, 4, 13, 14, 15, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 23, 24, 25, 27, .....	63
SOUTH-HOLD, .....	3, 9, 13, 14, 17, 20, 24, 25, 27, 63, 74
STIRLING, EARL OF, .....	6
SYLVESTERS, .....	9
SYLVESTER, FAMILY OF,.....	192, 193, 194
TAXATION AND REPRESENTATION,.....	94
THOMPSON, COL., COUNT RUMFORD,.....	121
TIMBER,.....	3
TRIBUTE BY INDIANS TO ENGLISH, ...	66
TROUP, ROBERT, AFFIDAVIT OF,.....	191
UNDERHILL, CAPT. JOHN, .....	76 to 79
UNION WITH CONNECTICUT,.....	24
VLISSINGEN, (FLUSHING,).....	13
WADING RIVER, ..	63
WAMPUM,.....	69
WAR OF THE REVOLUTION,.....	119
WEST HILLS, ..	vi
WITCHCRAFT, ...	24
WOOD, JONAS, .....	v
WOOD, SILAS, SKETCH OF, .....	from v to xxi
WOODHULL, GENERAL NATHANIEL, SKETCH OF, ....	from 120 to 139
WOODHULL, GENERAL NATHANIEL, MURDER OF, .....	191
YOUNGS, REV. JOHN, .....	34, 35, 36



#### ERRATA.

- On 4th page, 15th line, for "twenty shillings" read ten shillings a load.
- On 5th page, bottom line, before the note,\* read North America from 30 to 58 degrees, instead of "from 38 to 58 degrees" of N. Lat. was discovered by Sebastian Cabot.
- On 46th page, 27th line from top, for "among the town records of Newton," read Newtown.





BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 06506 298 4

RC

DEC 7 1977



